

Printed for J. Pemberton.

I. SPECTACLE de la NATURE; or Nature Display'd. Being Discourses on such Particulars of Natural History, as were thought most proper to excite the Curiosity, and form the Minds of Youth. Illustrated with Copper Plates. Translated from the Original *French*.

N. B. The Author of *Spectacle de la Nature* has explain'd with great Wit and Beauty, the most curious Particulars in Nature, relating to Terrestrial Animals, Birds, Insects, Fishes, and Plants. If I might be allow'd to judge of the Success of this Book, from the Pleasure which the Reading of it gave me, I should pronounce it very great. It was at my Request, and in compliance with my most earnest Solicitations, that the Author undertook this Work, &c. Mr. Rollin's Preface to his History of the *Egyptians, Carthaginians, &c.* Vol. IV.

II. THE Fourth Edition of the History of the REVOLUTIONS that happen'd in the Government of the *Roman Republic*. Written in *French* by the *Abbot de Vertot*, of the Royal Academy of Inscriptions, &c. *Englisht* by Mr. Ozel, from the Original, newly reprinted at *Paris*, with Amendments and Additions by the Author himself, in almost every Page; besides not a few essential Alterations and Corrections in this Fourth Edition, more than any of the preceding ones; either *French* or *Dutch*. To which is prefix'd, A Translation of a Memorial sent from *London*, by the late Earl Stanhope, to the *Abbot de Vertot* at *Paris*, containing divers Questions relating to the Constitution of the Roman Senate. With the Abbot's Answer. In two Volumes. price 10 s.

Printed for J. Pemberton.

I. SPECTACLE de la NATURE; or Nature Display'd. Being Discourses on such Particulars of Natural History, as were thought most proper to excite the Curiosity, and form the Minds of Youth. Illustrated with Copper Plates. Translated from the Original *French*.

N. B. The Author of *Spectacle de la Nature* has explain'd with great Wit and Beauty, the most curious Particulars in Nature, relating to Terrestrial Animals, Birds, Insects, Fishes, and Plants. If I might be allow'd to judge of the Success of this Book, from the Pleasure which the Reading of it gave me, I should pronounce it very great. It was at my Request, and in compliance with my most earnest Solicitations, that the Author undertook this Work, &c. Mr. Rollin's Preface to his History of the *Egyptians, Carthaginians, &c.* Vol. IV.

II. THE Fourth Edition of the History of the REVOLUTIONS that happen'd in the Government of the *Roman Republic.* Written in *French* by the *Abbot de Vertot*, of the Royal Academy of Inscriptions, &c. *Englisht* by Mr. Ozel, from the Original, newly reprinted at *Paris*, with Amendments and Additions by the Author himself, in almost every Page; besides not a few essential Alterations and Corrections in this Fourth Edition, more than any of the preceding ones; either *French* or *Dutch*. To which is prefix'd, A Translation of a Memorial sent from *London*, by the late Earl Stanhope, to the *Abbot de Vertot* at *Paris*, containing divers Questions relating to the Constitution of the Roman Senate. With the *Abbot's* Answer. In two Volumes. price 10 s.

MEMOIRS

OF THE

Count *de FORBIN*,

COMMODORE

In the NAVY of FRANCE:

AND

Knight of the Order of St. *Lewis*.

Translated from the FRENCH.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

The Second Edition.

VOL. II.



L O N D O N:

Printed for J. PEMBERTON, at the *Buck* in *Fleet-street*.

M.DCC.XXXIV.

MEMOIRS

HAIT FO

Comte de FORBIN.

COMMODORE

the Navy of France:

GVA

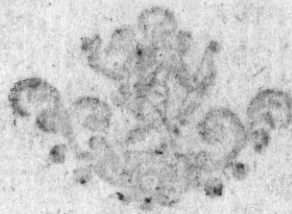
Knight of the Order of St. Louis.

[illegible]

2 3 M U O V Q W T N

CONFIDENTIAL

107





MEMOIRS

1698.

OF

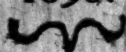
Count DE FORBIN, &c.



WHILST I was repofing myself, after the many Fatigues I had undergone, I receiv'd a Letter from Court, which made me very uneasy, as I little expected fuch a one. It confifted wholly of Reproaches, at which I was greatly fhock'd, well knowing I had not deferv'd them. The Minifter complain'd, that I had prevented the Conful of *Genoa* from purchafing four *Algerine Turks*; and added, in very harfh Terms, that I had no Bufinefs to concern myfelf with Traffic, which he faid, was properly the Bufinefs of the Intendant of the Gallies; and for that reason he was very much displeas'd at the Liberty I had taken on that Occafion.

The Author receives a Letter from Court.

1698.



HE complain'd farther, that I had not obey'd the Orders I had receiv'd, to sail for *Algiers*, and take in Mr. du *Sceau*, the King's Envoy there; but on the contrary, had laid up my Ship, as if I had receiv'd no such Orders; that my great Dispatch in unrigging her, shew'd plain enough, how little I was inclin'd to undertake that Voyage. That his Majesty highly offended at my Conduct on this Occasion, was resolv'd to punish my Remissness, and therefore commanded me to equip immediately the same Vessel, to obey my Orders, and take the same Crew on Board with me; and added, that in case I made the least Delay, or scrupled to command the *Trident*, he would give her to the Baron *des Adrets*.

Is order'd
to refit
his Ship.

He answers
the Letter.

ALL these Complaints were groundless. I therefore answer'd the Minister, that the Consul of *Genoa* must be very bold, in daring to advance such an Untruth; that so far from concerning myself with his Traffic, I never once knew he intended to purchase *Turks*; in a word, that I never had any manner of Correspondence with him.

AND in order to clear up this Affair to the Court, after having given a compleat Relation in my Letter, of my Conduct at *Genoa*, when I sail'd thither by Order of Mr. *d'Estrees*,

sent



sent the very Letter the Consul had writ to me, which plainly prov'd how Matters stood between us; and concluded, with desiring his Lordship to punish the Author of so many Falshoods.

WITH regard to the second Article, I plainly saw that *Bidaus's* malicious Insinuations might have given Occasion, at least partly, to that Minister's Conjectures: However, nothing could possibly be more groundless; for notwithstanding I had defended my own Right and Privileges, with respect to the *Serious* which I was order'd to command; it was in the main indifferent to me, whether I hoisted my Flag on Board that, or any other Ship.

UPON this head, I answer'd, that as to the Order which he had reproach'd me with not obeying, I could affirm that I never had the least Notice of it; and to make my Justification still clearer, I sent him the Minutes of the several Orders I had receiv'd from Court, and Mr. *d'Etrées*, in all which there was not the least mention of my sailing for *Algiers*.

WITH regard to the laying up my Ship so suddenly, I writ Word that the sole Motive of my Dispatch on that Occasion, was purely to save his

MEMOIRS of the

1698. Majesty's Money; and that I had never employ'd above three Days in unrigging a Vessel, as Mr. *de Vauray* the Intendant, and *le Vasseur* Superintendant, could testify.

Effects of
this Letter.

THO' my Letter did not produce all the Advantages I expected from it, it nevertheless destroy'd part of the Falsities which had been laid to my Charge; the Minister answer'd it, and acquainted me, that having discover'd my Innocence with respect to the Consul of *Genoa*, he had reprimanded him very warmly, and reproach'd him in the most severe Terms upon that Account.

He is accus'd.

BUT after having applauded the Vigour with which I serv'd his Majesty, and my Dispatch in laying up my Ship, he added; that he thought me very bold, in presuming to deny my having receiv'd an Order to sail for *Algiers*, to take in Mr. *du Sceau*, who had waited for me a considerable Time in that City; and to confound me at once, he dispatch'd in the same Packet with his Letter, the Minutes of the Order which had been sent me from the Navy Office.

He invalidates it.

VEX'D to find that the Minister seemed still to doubt of my Sincerity, I writ to him again, and told him, that I deserv'd the most grievous Punishment

1698.



ishment which could be inflicted; if, after having received the Order in question, and refus'd to comply with it, I still was so audacious as to deny it; but begg'd him to observe, that this Order had been dispatch'd, during the Siege of *Barcelona*; that this City having held but a long Time, and the Person to whom the Dispatches of the Court had been sent, having vast Business upon his Hands, he possibly might have forgot to mention it to me; that with regard to myself, I besought him to believe me, when I assur'd him, I had never been acquainted with his Resolutions on that Head.

THE Answer I receiv'd from the Minister, was as follows:

"I am now, Sir, thoroughly persuaded, that the Remissness which was laid to your Charge, was altogether groundless. The King is highly satisfied with your Services. Set sail for *Algiers*, and take Mr. du Sceau on Board, who waits for you there. You are order'd to compliment the new King in his Majesty's Name upon his Election, the Form of which Mr. du Sceau will dictate to you.

A little after the Receipt of this Letter, I set sail for *Algiers*, where I

sets sail for
Algiers,

1698. was receiv'd in Quality of Ambassador Extraordinary. I made my Compliments to the King; a Man that had not one Talent to boast of, he being originally a Farrier, and tho' a mere rustic, and a very heavy Creature, had been rais'd to the Throne, purely by the Caprice of a People, who were equally ignorant and barbarous. The whole Answer he made, was compris'd in these few Words, *You are welcome, and very welcome.*

He has Audience of the King of Algiers and the Divan.

AFTER having had Audience of the King, I was conducted to the *Divan*, where the *Aga* of the *Janissaries* and the rest of the *Bassa's* were assembled; this Minister, who is invested with a greater Power than the King; he dethroning or beheading him at Pleasure, made a very handsome Answer in the *Turkish* Language to my Compliment. He was a *French* Renegado. During the Conversation, which was carried on in good *French*, Coffee was presented me, as also to the *Aga*, and the rest of the *Divan*; in a word, I receiv'd the utmost Civilities from that Minister, who seem'd as sharp and subtle, as the King was heavy and stupid. At my leaving the *Divan*, I went and din'd with Mr. *du Sceau*, where I receiv'd his Majesty of *Algier's* Presents, consisting of a dozen Hens and

two

two Lambs. Dinner being over, I return'd to the Ship, and two Days after Mr. du Sceau coming on Board, we sail'd for *Toulon*, where, after having laid up my Ship, I return'd Home, in order to enjoy the Fruits of Peace with the rest of the Kingdom.

AFTER some Months stay in my own House, the want of Employment leaving me at my Liberty, I set out Post for *Paris*, where I hoped to ingratiate my self with the Court. Being got to *Verfailles*, extremely weary and dry, I drank warm Water to quench my Thirst. The Chevalier *de la Ron-gère* who was along with me, drank also for Company sake; but the Water being corrupted, about three Hours after both the Chevalier and I were seiz'd with a violent Feaver, accompanied with the most dangerous Symptoms.

CARDINAL *de Fanson* seeing me in this Condition, order'd his Coach to be got ready, and carried me to *Paris*. The first Order he gave at his Arrival, was for his Physician to visit me, who came immediately, and according to the usual Custom of his Brethren of the Faculty, order'd me in the first place to be let Blood. I was resolv'd not to comply with his

1699

Prescription, upon which the Cardinal came to my Bed-side, and was very urgent with me to follow the Doctor's Advice; but I begg'd him to leave me at my Liberty, and assur'd him, I should be well by next Day, without having Recourse to the Remedy, and at the same time told him, I had no manner of Opinion of it.

What pass'd
between
him and
the Physi-
cian,

THE Cardinal finding me inflexible, left me, and dismiss'd the Physician, who said, as he was going away, that Sea-faring Men were an out-of-the-way kind of People, and very obstinate; that however, they would soon be forc'd to send for him again; that so far from being well, I should be delirious, the Fever being so violent, that it would certainly be attended with the worst Consequences.

He cures
himself
with Water.

BEING alone in my Chamber, I order'd some of the Seine Water to be fetch'd both from above and below *Paris*. That above was to drink, and that below to be employ'd in Glisters. I drank a great Quantity of it luke-warm, and so many Glisters were apply'd, that in less than ten Hours the Fever had quite left me.

THE

THE next Day I waited upon the Cardinal, where I found the Physician that had attended upon me the Day before, who greatly surpriz'd to see me upon my Legs, and rid of the Fever, asked what Remedy I had employ'd to get well so soon; *I wanted nothing,* says I, *but Water;* and thereupon told him in what manner I had us'd it. This, says he, must certainly be an excellent Remedy, since it cur'd you so soon; and afterwards rallying very pleasantly, he begg'd me not to give the Receipt to any Person, for fear of starving the whole Faculty.

His Discourse with the Physician.

THE Chevalier de la Rongere, whom the Water had also thrown into a Fever, would not use the same Remedy as I had done, but abandon'd himself implicitly to the Physicians, who after having debated a long while on his Distemper, blooded, purg'd, and dispatch'd him out-right.

The Chevalier de Rongere killed by the Physicians.

SOME time after this Fit of Sickness, His Majesty made several Sea-Officers Knights of *St. Lewis*, of whom I had the Honour to be one. The King, to do me the greater Honour, order'd me to withdraw from the rest into his Apartment, where he Knighted me with the usual Formalities.

The Author is made Knight of *St. Lewis*.

1700.

Innocent
XII.

ABOUT this Time the Pope died, and the Cardinals prepar'd to set out for *Rome*. Cardinal *de Fanson* knew the Court Secret. The King being desirous of obliging Cardinal *de Fanson* to the utmost of his Power, had order'd the Minister who presid'd over the Affairs of the Navy, to give the Command of the Gallies which were to carry the Cardinals, to none but Cardinal *de Fanson's* Relations.

THE Minister sent for me in order to be inform'd of their Names, and bid me to go immediately for *Toulon* and fit out two Transports, to carry the Baggage of their Eminencies to *Civita Vecchia*.

Goes to
Lyons.

I could not set out from *Paris* till some Days after Cardinal *de Fanson* and Cardinal *de Coualin* had left that City. Upon my Arrival at *Lyons*, I saw several Court Abbés, among whom were the Abbé *de Lamoignon*, Son to the President of that Name, and Abbé *Manfard*. These Gentlemen were going to *Rome* in the Cardinal's Train, and were to go on board the Gallies.

Dispute
with the
Custom-
House Offi-
cers,

WE all set out from *Lyons* in two Boats, one of which was to carry the Cardinals and Gentlemen, and the other the Servants and Baggage; I took my Trunks aboard our Boat, and would

not

died, not suffer my Servant to go into the 1700.
 out other. I now took upon me to be
 knew the Steersman, when being got to A-
 being vignon, two Custom-House Officers
 Jan- came to search. Our Gentlemen, high-
 had ly offended at their Compliment, and
 over assuming an Air of Authority which
 give no ways became them, gave the Offi-
 chich cers very ill Language, and threatened
 none to throw them over-board; but the
 Officers, disregarding all they said, or-
 order'd the Matter to cross the Water,
 and where the Custom-House stood, in or-
 Tou- der that all the Things might be
 arry search'd at Leisure.

s to Finding it would be best to use the
 Officers civilly, I gave them my Keys,
 till desiring them to dispatch me as soon as
 and possible, and let me pursue my Jour-
 nity. They were so pleas'd with my
 fe- Civility, that they refus'd to search my
 vere Trunks, and said they desired nothing
 the farther; and that I was at Liberty to
 bbé take them away whenever I thought
 go- proper.

ain, UPON this I landed, and meeting Arrives at
 Gal- with a Coach, I set out for *Marseilles*, *Marseilles*,
 two laughing heartily at my Fellow-Tra-
 the vellers for having hector'd so unsuccess-
 her fully; for, upon my Arrival at *Mar-*
 my *seilles*, I was inform'd that they had
 uld been put to a vast deal of Trouble be-
 not fore they could get their Trunks re-
 turn'd,

1780.

turn'd, and that had not the Marquis de Velleron, Cardinal de Janson's Nephew, made a great Bustle upon that Occasion, they would have been kept above a Month in the Custom-House.

An Archbishop is heartily fuddled.

THE Day I arriv'd at *Marseilles*, Mr. *Arnoux*, Intendant of the Gallies, gave a splendid Entertainment to Cardinal de Janson and his Collegue, to which my Sister and some other Ladies were invited. A *Spanish* Monk, nominated to the Archbishoprick of *Cagliari*, an intimate Friend of Cardinal de Janson's, with whom he had formerly been acquainted in *Rome*, and whom he had visited that Morning, was also invited. The Cardinal, who made him the Compliment, had desired my Sister to sit next to the Prelate, and take care of him. She was so careful of her Charge, that having seated him between her self and another Lady, she toasted so many Healths, and told him so many pleasant Stories, that the good Archbishop being little us'd to *French* Customs and *French* Wine, was at last compleatly in his Altitudes.

THE Cardinal perceiving the Pickle the Prelate was in, sat upon Tenters, when I happily came into the Room; "Dear Cousin (says he to me, in my Ear) those idle Baggages there have
" fuddled

"fuddled the Archbishop, but I beg you to have an Eye upon him, and not leave him in this Condition." 1700.

THEY had now sat a considerable time at Table, when the Archbishop rising from his Seat, I conducted him out of the Room, and putting him into a Chair, did not leave him 'till he was got safe to his Inn. The poor Prelate, who was not so far gone, as to be insensible of the good Office I then did him, thank'd me heartily for it. The Archbishop carried home fuddled.

THE next Day, in taking my Leave of him, "My Lord, says I, I am a Sailor, and Sailors, you know, don't scruple to ramble any where; be assured I will one Day do my self the Honour to pay my Respects to you at your Palace." He protested he should be very glad to see me, and that in case he was ever so happy, I should have no reason to repent of my Voyage; for that he would pay me all the Civility that lay in his Power. After taking Leave of the two Cardinals, I went to Toulon, and there fitted out the Transports which were to carry the Baggage, and a few Days after they set Sail for *Civita Vecchia*. Goes for Toulon.

ABOUT this Time the King had order'd three Ships to be fitted out at Toulon to go to Cadiz, in order to join the Marquis A Ship is given him.
de

1700.

de Relingue's Squadron, who had fitted out six Ships at *Brest*; and this Squadron, consisting of nine Men of War, was order'd to secure our Trade from the Depredations of the *Algerines*. I had Orders to Command the *Rash* Man of War; and the Marquis *de Villars*, Brother to the Marshal of that Name, commanded the Squadron, when we all set Sail for *Cadiz*.

He obliges five *Algerine* Vessels to send out their Long Boat to him.

IN our Course, being got off of *Malaga*, I gave chase to five *Algerine* Vessels, and oblig'd them to send out their Long Boat. Being ask'd by what Right they carry'd a White Flag, when they were absolutely forbid to do it by several Treaties; they excus'd themselves by saying, That it was the White Flag of *Portugal*, and not that of *France*. Tho' this Excuse was an errant Falshood, we nevertheless dismiss'd them.

A Slave escapes out of one of the *Algerine* Vessels.

BEING got above a League from us, one of their Slaves, a Christian, threw himself into the Sea, and swam towards our Ships. The Sea was as smooth as Glass, and he was got a considerable way unperceiv'd; when the Corsair spying him, sent out the Long Boat after him. However, this was not done immediately; and as the Slave found he was discover'd, he call'd out to us as loud as ever he cou'd baul, to come to

1700.

to his Assistance. I sent out my Boat, which coming up to the Slave before the *Algerine* Long-Boat, they took him in, and brought him on Board.

A Moment after, the Long Boat came up, and desired me to give back the Slave. I gave the *Algerines* a great many substantial Reasons, by which I prov'd, that I ought not to deliver him up; but to no purpose, and they still persisted in their Demands. Wearied with their Importunities, I order'd them to row away; and threatned, in case of their Refusal, to fire upon them. These Menaces frighted them so much, that they returned immediately on Board.

The *Algerines* will have the Slave surrender'd, but are refus'd.

THE Moment they were got in, a Fire was immediately lighted, level with the Water, and upon my asking the Slave what it meant, he assur'd me 'twas the Signal they had mutually agreed upon; and was always made use of when they had any important Affair to communicate to one another. Upon this Advice I stood upon my Guard: Part of the Crew were under Arms all Night; however, we never saw them afterwards. A little after we arriv'd at *Cadix*, where we joyn'd Mr. *de Relingue*, who order'd me to cruize about *Gibraltar* and *Malaga* upon the *Sally-men*, who are Mahometans,

The *Algerines* make a Signal.

and

1700.



Subject of
his Instru-
ctions.

and subject to the Emperor of *Mo-
rocco*.

By my Instructions, I was order'd not to infest any Body but those Ro- vers; and was particularly comman- ded to pay the *Spaniards* all imaginable Civilities. The only Effect of my Cruizing, was, that it oblig'd the E- nemy to keep in their Harbours; and indeed, I did not spy one of their Ves- sels, all the time I was out at Sea.

ALL that now remain'd for me to do, to fulfil the Tenor of my In- structions, was to be civil to the *Spa- niards*, which I punctually obey'd; and daily entertain'd on board my Ship all such of that Nation as had the Air of Persons of some Note. Tho' I treated them in a very splendid manner, it put me to no great Expence, for my Peo- ple killed more Game than we could consume; and then Fish is so plenty, that it sells for a very Trifle.

Carries a
*Spanish Go-
vernor, &c.
into Africa.*

WHILST I lay on the Coast of *Ma- laga*, the Governor of *Matassar*, a *Spa- nish* Fort in *Africa*, desired my Leave to come on Board, and begg'd me to carry him and his Family to his Go- vernment, which I readily consented to. He was pretty far advanc'd in Years. He embark'd with his Wife and eight Women, who were his Servants, or
Wives

1700.

Wives to some inferior Officers that were going to their Husbands, I paid them (pursuant to my Orders) the utmost Civilities, especially the Governour's Lady, whom I would force to accept of my Cabbin.

THE good Lady was so pleas'd with my polite Behaviour, that in return she offer'd me more than I cou'd in Modesty accept. However, as she was not only very lean and ugly, but had a certain Distemper in her Leg, which the *Spanish* Women are frequently troubled with; I thanked her, and excus'd my self by saying, I cou'd not be so unjust as to violate the Laws of Hospitality, or injure my Guest, who seem'd to be much of a Gentleman.

AND indeed he was so in every Respect; for before he landed, he offer'd to gratify my Servants in a very handsome manner; but I absolutely forbid it. My Generosity upon this occasion, which is not very common in *Spain*, gave him the highest Satisfaction. He thanked me a thousand times, and at the same time gave me the utmost Testimonies of Friendship, which I believ'd sincere. I am persuad'd he would have been much better pleas'd with me, had he known my Behaviour with regard to his Lady.

AT

1700.

He joins
the Squa-
dron of
Mr. de Re-
lingues.

AT my return from Cruising I was order'd to return to *Cadiz*, in order to join Mr. *de Relingues*, who wanted to reinforce his Squadron; and put himself in a condition, in case it should be necessary, to make head against the *Spanish* Admiral, who was to sail from *Biscay*.

They meet
with the
Spanish Ad-
miral.

THE Circumstance we were apprehensive of, was, lest his Ship which never Salutes others, when she sails into her own Ports, should require it from us, as she does from all other Nations. Mr. *de Relingues*, who was resolutely bent not to salute the *Spanish* Admiral, if he did not engage to return it, was very glad I had join'd his Squadron, in case he should be obliged to Fight; however, matters were not carried to that height; the Admiral coming into the *Puntal*, was saluted according to the usual Custom by all the other Nations, the *French* excepted, and he did not make the least difficulty upon that Account.

The Ships
are laid up.

THINGS having been carried on in so amicable a manner, I again went a Cruising, and was but a short time out at Sea, because the Season was so far advanced; whereupon I rejoin'd the Squadron, and we return'd to *Toulon*, where our Ships were laid up. Upon our Arrival, we

were

were inform'd at one and the same 1700. time, that the Duke of *Anjou* was Crown'd King of *Spain*, and that War was proclaim'd against the Emperor, upon which occasion, the King's Ships were beginning to embark Forces for the *Milaneze*.

WHILST these Troops were embarking, I lived unemploy'd at *Toulon*; but my Inaction occasion'd an unhappy Affair, which I shall now relate. As it gave me pain for several Years together, I wish from my Heart I could possibly suppress it, in order not to revive some Circumstances, which I would be glad for my own sake to forget eternally.

BUT how is it possible to conceal an Accident, which was blazed so much all the Country over? or what Apology could I make to the Public, should I be silent on this occasion, especially since I promised to give a faithful Account of my most minute Actions? As therefore it will be impossible for me not to mention it, I shall do it in few words; and tho' I shall have the Dissatisfaction to recall a Story, which has given me the greatest Anxiety; it yet will be some Consolation to me, to inform the Public that I was prosecuted very unjustly, and vigorously protected by the Judges.

THE

1700.

He has an
Intrigue.

THE indolent Life I led at *Toulon*, as was before observ'd, had given me an opportunity of sometimes visiting a Gentlewoman, who was well known for certain Gallantries, which tho' they did not quite eclipse her Reputation, might nevertheless make her Virtue suspected. I indeed had not been long acquainted with her, before I found she was very frail. I won't endeavour to excuse my Conduct on this occasion, or plead my own Apology, being conscious that I ought to have been more prudent than my Mistress; particularly after I found, I was not the only Man to whom she indulged her Smiles.

His Mistress resolves to impeach him for a Rape.

HOWEVER, I did not take this Course, and as I had very little Love for her, I never boasting the least delicacy on that Article, we carried on our Intrigue some Months longer, which was attended with no other consequence but the Expence it put me to. However, this was far from being what she aimed at; and I was afterwards informed that she had other Designs in view; and setting a much higher Price upon her Favours, was resolved to have me seiz'd for attempting a Rape.

I was Thunderstruck at what I heard, and notwithstanding our Intrigue

trigue was pretty private, and that she had neither Promises nor Letters by which she might convict me; for I had never made any either by word of mouth or writing; I nevertheless dreaded very much a Discovery upon this occasion, knowing it would be attended with the most unhappy Consequences.

To obviate them, I did all that lay in my power to prevent their executing a design, the bare Threats of which made me very uneasy. I discourst both the Mother and Daughter; and represented to the latter, that it would be a great Blemish to her Character; that she'd be universally despis'd, and suffer beneath a load of Shame and Infamy; and this without the least Advantage to her self; I being absolutely resolv'd not to make her my Wife let what wou'd happen.

ALL my Reasons made no manner of Impression on her Mind; but in order to leave no Stone unturn'd, finding my first Endeavours ineffectual, I resolv'd to relate the particulars of my Affair to the Bishop of ****, presuming that his Mediation would be of Service to me; and flatter'd my self, that this Prelate would be so much the readier to espouse my Cause, as he had

1700.

He endeavours to prevent the Consequences,

He addresses a Bishop on this Occasion,

1700. had always us'd me with the highest Civility, and sometimes seem'd to Interest himself pretty warmly in my Affairs.

His Lordship's Answer,

HE indeed appear'd very ready to do me Service; but told me, he had not the least Influence over either the Mother or Daughter; however, says he, "get them to come to me, and depend upon it, I'll do all that lies in my Power, to engage them to change their Resolution." At my taking leave of his Lordship, I went to Mrs. *Pallas's* the Captain's Lady so often mention'd, I let her into the whole Secret, and begged her to go to Mademoiselle de ** and use her endeavours to engage both the Mother and Daughter to wait upon the Bishop.

His Mistress waits upon the Bishop.

As Mrs. *Pallas* was very well acquainted with the Family, she soon prevail'd; accordingly they all came and waited upon his Lordship; but disagreeing in several points they were obliged to send for me. This was a most mortifying Circumstance for the young Gentlewoman; I being absolutely oblig'd to divulge a thousand Particulars which forc'd a Blush from her; and fill'd her with so much Confusion as struck her dumb more than twenty times.

THE

1700.

THE Bishop observing the Perplexity both of the Mother and Daughter, called them into another Room, where they had a long Discourse, but the Particulars of it I know not; however, his Lordship told me, that they were obstinately bent to prosecute me, tho' he had employ'd all his Rhetoric to dissuade them from it; and therefore, he thought the best Course I cou'd take, was to set out immediately for *Aix*, in order to advise with my Friends; and that he in the mean time wou'd endeavour to suspend the Prosecution, at least for some Days, in order, if possible, to ward off the impending Blow.

The Bishop's Advice,

ACCORDINGLY I went to *Aix*; waited upon all such as I thought cou'd do me Service; and brought from them several commendatory Letters, directed to the Judge of *Toulon*. The Moment I return'd, I waited on the Bishop, and acquainted him with my Success at *Aix*; but found Things had taken a quite different turn in my Absence; for the Prelate was quite chang'd with regard to me, and received me with the utmost Coldness and Indifference. I can't say how the Juggle was carried on, however his Lordship shew'd himself afterwards as much my Enemy, as he had before appeared my Friend.

His Lordship becomes his Enemy.

A T

1700.

His Mistress
makes her
Com-
plaint.

She pre-
tends that
she is with
Child by
him.

He address-
es one who
had been
her Con-
fessor.

At last my Mistress made her Complaint; but unluckily for her, she spoke too freely, and her great Vivacity and Fire, made her divulge several Particulars, which she, for her own sake, ought to have conceal'd. However, it was not enough to complain against me, but she must also prove her Accusations; and here she was in a great Dilemma, she not having one Proof to support her Charge.

I before observ'd, that our Intrigue had been carried on pretty privately, and that I had not made her any Promises either by word of Mouth or in Writing. She indeed had made an Affidavit that she was with Child; however this was yet very uncertain, insomuch that the Surgeons were not agreed upon it. In this Perplexity, not knowing what to do, she hit upon an Expedient which at first embarrass'd me very much, but afterwards turn'd to my Advantage: for the understanding of which, I'm obliged to recall a Circumstance that shou'd have been mention'd before.

THE Moment I had heard of the Charge, I went to a Fryar who had formerly been my Mistress's Confessor. I at first suppos'd, but was out in my Conjecture, that the Father might still have some little Authority over

over I
would
he she
her C
that I
all I g
furnis
again
penfal
Proof
the F
both a
furnis
fir'd,
depos
A s
the m
vulge
havin
the u
absol
made
who
Reso
gain
to w
Bishe
that
Mon
ons
Affai
U
after
V

1700.

over her, and consequently that she would comply with whatever Advice he should give her; but she had left her Ghostly Father a long time, so that his Endeavours were fruitless, and all I gain'd by this false step was, to furnish my Antagonist with Weapons against my self; for she being indispensably oblig'd to trump up some Proofs against me, and reflecting that the Father and Mrs. *Pallas*, who were both acquainted with the Affair, might furnish her with as many as she desir'd, she undertook to engage them to depose against me.

As both of them had promis'd in the most sacred manner, not to divulge the Particulars I told them (I having reveal'd my self to them with the utmost Caution) they at first were absolutely deaf to the Offers that were made them; upon which my Mistress, who was not to be diverted from her Resolution, finding she should never gain her Ends, unless she went openly to work, prevail'd so far with the Bishop, who favoured her in all things, that she obliged him to publish a Monitory in due form, to force all Persons who had any knowledge of this Affair, to reveal what they knew.

UPON this Occasion Mrs. *Pallas*, after mature Deliberation and Advice,

The Bishop publishes a Monitory,

The Fryar deposes against him.

1700.  thought her self not bound to comply with those Censures, and accordingly did not once trouble her Head about them; but the case was quite different with the Fryar, who could never be prevail'd with to hold his Tongue, but obeying implicitly all that Prelate's Dictates, he was not ashamed to publish to all the World, the Particulars which had been told him in Confession.

HIS Conduct on this Occasion was a great Blemish to his Character; but I shall not mention the Particulars in this place, being persuaded that the whole was Calumny. However, tho' I don't desire to rake into the Ashes of that Father, I yet must acquaint my Readers, that his Brethren being highly exasperated upon that Account, talked to him in such severe Terms, that he fell sick, and died three Days after he had appeared against me.

He Addresses his Friends.

IN order to draw some Advantage from the Monitory, I desir'd a considerable number of my Friends, who I knew were well acquainted with several Particulars, which reflected no great honour on my Mistress, to make their Affidavit of them. They were very ready to serve me, and therefore waited upon the Grand Vicar; but

he absolutely refus'd to hear them, upon pretence that as the Monitory had been publish'd against me, I ought not to reap any benefit from it. 1700.

EXASPERATED at his glaring Partiality, that was so prejudicial to my Interest, I went to him along with the Witnesses, and declar'd that in case he refus'd to give us a hearing, I would take out an Action against him, which terrified him so much, that he suffer'd them to give in all their Depositions.

Injustice of the Bishop's Grand Vicar.

MATTERS were upon this Foot, and I continued to defend my Cause, when an Affair happen'd which was of worse Consequence to me than the former, from the bad light it was set in; and indeed nothing like it happen'd to me before or since. Here follows a genuine Account of the whole. Coming out one Evening from my Lodgings, in order to go to an Attorney to whom I had mentioned my Affair, I was met by the Chevalier de Gineft, Captain of a Frigate, an old Friend of mine. He represented to me, that I was very much in the wrong to venture out so rashly in the Night, and unarm'd as it were, at a time when I had got an ugly Affair on my Hands; he said, that my Negligence upon this occasion, which he

Another unhappy Affair, worse than the former,

A Friend presents him with two Pistols for his Security.

1700. had observ'd from the very beginning of my Affair, had made him very uneasy; and prompted him to bring me a pair of Pistols, which he then drew out of his Pocket, and presenting them to me, desir'd me to carry them always about me.

He accepts
of the
Pistols.

HE continued to observe, that I ought to consider that the Lady in question had three Brothers in *Toulon*, of whom one was an Officer, and the other two Midshipmen; that all three had several intimate Friends, who were continually with them; and that considering the despair to which my Refusal had reduc'd them, I ought to be for ever upon my Guard; that tho' they had hitherto acted like brave Men, it was to be fear'd that the desire of having Satisfaction, might prompt them to attack me at a disadvantage; in fine, as tho' a Prophet had spoke; 'Believe me, says he, 'don't scruple to take these Pistols; 'who knows what may happen? 'Possibly you may have occasion for 'them sooner than you are aware 'of.

THO' I never before carried Pistols about me, yet the Chevalier was so vastly urgent, that his Advice at last prevail'd. 'Twas very happy for me it did; not that I had the least room

to a
Mist
of H
a ba
that
expl
Hea
othe
cere
warr
form
But
of t
whic
vice
of a
neve
into
I we
he w
mer
vant
med
on
side.
A
Boy
wall
the
Chil
bid
Boy
Com

1700.

to apprehend any Treachery from my
 Mistress's Relations, who were Men
 of Honour, and incapable of doing
 a base Action; for notwithstanding
 that the Chevalier *de Gineft* did not
 explain himself so tenderly upon this
 Head, yet we are to consider this no
 otherwise than as the Effect of a sin-
 cere Friendship, which soon grows
 warm, and in certain Circumstances
 forms to it self imaginary Uneasinesses
 But my good Fortune was, that one
 of the Pistols which he gave me, and
 which I put in my Pocket, was of Ser-
 vice to me a Moment after, to get out
 of a Scrape, which a Man, tho' he be
 never so prudent, may sometimes fall
 into. After the Chevalier had left me,
 I went to the Attorney's, and was told
 he was gone a walking, it being Sum-
 mer time, and very hot. As his Ser-
 vants said they expected him im-
 mediately, I sat down in the Street
 on a stone Bench by the Door-
 side.

A Moment after, two Asses which a
 Boy was leading to Water came and
 wallow'd just by me. As they kick'd
 the Dust in my Face, I push'd the
 Child with the End of my Cane, and
 bid him drive away his Beasts. The
 Boy went on without making the least
 Complaint; but about half a Quarter
 of

He quarrels
 with a Ba-
 ker.

1700. of an Hour after, I saw a tall, fat Fellow in Drawers advancing towards me, holding a little Boy by the Hand, who pointing at me with his Finger, cried, *That's the Man that beat me*; he had no sooner said this, but the Fellow address'd himself to me in these Words, *Do you keep this Child, that you pretend to beat him so?*

The Fellow
is insolent.

NOTWITHSTANDING the insolent Behaviour of this Rascal deserv'd a sharp Reprimand, I nevertheless check'd my self so far, as to answer him with great Coolness; and only told him, I did not know what he meant; that I had so many things in my Head, that I was far from designing to thrash any Body, and therefore desir'd him to go about his Business. The Fellow, who one shou'd have thought wou'd have been satisfy'd with these Reasons, grew, on the contrary, much more saucy; and telling me, that Matters shou'd not pass so, he struck me such a violent Blow on the Head with his Fist, that my Hat and Wig flew off.

He shoots
the Baker.

IN the first Transports of my Rage I was for drawing my Sword, in order to sheath it in the Body of the Brute, but he did not give me time to do it. Being stronger by much than I, he flew upon me, threw me

me down, set one of his Knees upon my Belly, and almost throttled me with one Hand, while he struck me with all his Force over the Nose with the other. In this Condition, recollecting that I had Pistols about me, I drew one out of my Pocket, and fir'd it into his Guts; which I had no sooner done, but he loos'd his Hold, and cry'd, *I'm a dead Man!*

THE Moment he was got off, I snatch'd up my Hat and Wig, and scamper'd away as fast as my Legs could carry me, supposing, as it was dark, that no Body knew me; and notwithstanding that the Street was full of People who were breathing the Cool of the Evening; and that a great Croud of People were got about us, yet as there was no Light brought, I thought no one could possibly affirm that I was the Murderer.

I was right in my Conjectures, for no Soul knew me; and in order to get rid of the Populace, who were at my Heels, I rush'd into the Intendant's House which was open, and running thro' the Entry, got into another Street by the Back-door; but unhappily for me, a Maid in the House discover'd me by the Light of a Lanthorn which was hung out at the Door; immediately it was blaz'd all over the City,

~~~~~  
1700.

He leaves  
the City.

City, that I had kill'd *Vidal* the Baker.

THE Governor of *Toulon*, who was my intimate Friend, did all that he cou'd to stifle this Report, but it was not in his Power to do it. People were so bent upon having me prosecuted, that the Judge was forc'd to take out Informations against the Murtherer. Upon the Maid's Deposition, I was order'd to be seiz'd, and was thereupon forc'd to leave the City immediately.

The Baker  
justifies him  
with his Dying Words.

MY Friends, particularly Mr. *de Vauvray*, and the Governor, us'd all their Endeavours to make up the Matter; and for that Purpose got from the Baker, in his expiring Moments, an authentic Declaration, by which he did me Justice; he confess'd that he himself had been the Aggressor, and that what I had done was in Self-Defence. He declar'd that he forgave me, and desir'd me to pardon him for the Affront; that he had fallen upon me without knowing who I was; and lastly, that his brutal Usage of me alone, was the Cause of his Death.

The Widow  
and Children clear  
him.

HE died two Days after he had made this Confession, when his Widow and Children declar'd they would not prosecute me, and releas'd me of all Indictments from them, in consideration of four Thousand Livres, which I gave them

them  
these  
I sho  
there  
bisho  
and w  
*Janso*  
found  
me.

A  
vour  
his C  
Start  
Lord  
ker I  
as W  
Rape  
ing t  
whic  
guilt  
at N  
That  
tion  
Decl  
the r  
draw  
cur'd  
vanc  
my I  
T  
was  
ality  
depo

1700.



them by way of Satisfaction. Having got these Instruments, I did not doubt but I should easily obtain a Pardon, and thereupon sent the Whole to the Archbishop of *Aix*, who was then at *Paris*, and who, together with the Marquis de *Fanson*, apply'd to the Chancellor, but found that every thing went against me.

A Friend of Consequence who favour'd my Mistress, and employ'd all his Credit to serve her, had got the Start of me. He had writ to the chief Lord of the Admiralty, That the Baker I had killed was to have appeared as Witness against me, concerning a Rape I was charged with; that dreading the Consequence of his Deposition, which would infallibly have prov'd me guilty, I went into the Baker's Shop at Noon-Day, and basely shot him; That I had engag'd him, in consideration of a Sum of Money, to make a Declaration in my Favour; and that the rest of the Particulars which were drawn up in my Justification were procur'd merely by the Judge's Connivance, whom I had bought over to my Interest.

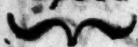
He is accus'd of murdering the Baker basely.

THIS was manifest Calumny, and was very easily seen thro'; for in reality, had the Baker been oblig'd to depose against me, at a time when I had

Mr. de Pontchartrain his Enemy in this Affair,



1700.



not done him the least Injury, was it probable to suppose he would have spar'd me, and made a Declaration in my Favour, after I had assassinated him in his own House? Nevertheless, tho' the Villany was so plain, Mr. de Pontchartrain gave Credit to it, and believing every Circumstance that was told him, he went to the Chancellor; set the Crime in the most odious Light, and represented to him that it was of the highest Consequence not to suffer it to go unpunish'd.

His Friends  
address the  
Chancellor  
for a Par-  
don,

SUCH was the Disposition of the Chancery with regard to me, when the Archbishop of Aix, and the Marquis de Fanson interceded for my Pardon. The Chancellor being prejudic'd against me, because of the many odious Circumstances his Son had told him, refus'd to grant their Request, by assuring them that it was not in his Power; that he was heartily sorry for it, but that the King only cou'd grant a Pardon on such Occasions; that they might address his Majesty, and might depend on't they shou'd meet with no Opposition from him; that he would obey whatever his Majesty should please to command; but that he could do nothing on his bare Authority, and without having an express Order from his Majesty for that Purpose.

THE

1700.

THE abovemention'd Gentlemen not having thought proper to address the King immediately, 'twas told me, that I was not to expect any Favour from the Court, and therefore that it was my Business to think seriously of getting off.

The Chancellor refuses to assist him.

WORDS cannot express the Uneasiness this gave me. I was at first so overwhelm'd with Grief, as almost to appear insensible of the Misfortune that had befallen me; but a little after, viewing it in its worst Light, and considering that I should thereby forfeit all my Reputation with regard to my Services, should I be forc'd to leave the Kingdom; and likewise the Stain which Calumny would throw upon my Character; the Victory my Enemies would thereby have over me, and a thousand such grating Circumstances together, plung'd me into such an Excess of Affliction, that I can scarce conceive how it was possible for me to bear up under them.

His great Anxiety.

NEVERTHELESS, as if this was not sufficient to oppress me, News was daily brought me to the Solitude whither I was retir'd, that my Mistress, taking Advantage of the ill State of my Affairs, prosecuted me with greater Vigour, and endeavour'd to have me condemn'd for Non-Appearance.

His Mistress prosecutes him with greater Vigour.

I

1700.

He resolves  
to fly his  
Country.

Sends a  
Letter to  
the Minister

I then perceived more sensibly than ever I had done before, what it is to lose a good Friend; for had Mr. *Bontems* been living, I should have been infinitely less perplex'd; but he was dead; and in him I lost my best Friend, and the Man who was best able to do me Service.

THE only Card that was now left me to play, was immediately to fly my Country. Accordingly, I resolved to settle my Affairs, and leave *France* as soon as possible; however, that my Silence might not make the World think I was guilty, I thought proper to write to Mr. *de Pontchartrain*; as follows:

MY LORD,

“ Had my ill Conduct brought me  
“ under your Displeasure, and occa-  
“ sion'd the Misfortunes I now suf-  
“ fer, I should be inconsolable.  
“ Judge of the Perplexity I must be in,  
“ when I consider that the numberless  
“ Troubles which now oppress me, are  
“ not owing to any Guilt of mine,  
“ but wholly to the Malice of my E-  
“ nemies. The dreadful State of my  
“ Affairs almost drives me to Despair.  
“ However, I will not give way to it,  
“ but am resolv'd to behave on this  
“ Occasion as becomes a brave Man;  
“ but



1700.

“but before I leave the Kingdom (since  
 “ ’tis the best thing I can do) I’ll do  
 “ my self the Honour to take my  
 “ Leave of your Lordship.

*I am, &c.*

THIS Letter succeeded beyond my Expectations; for Mr. *de Pontchartrain* having shewn it to his Father; “ Son, “ says the Chancellor to him, ’tis plain “ by this Letter that the Chevalier *de Forbin* intends to leave the Kingdom, “ and who knows but he designs to go “ over to the Enemy? The Leave he “ intends to take of you before he sets “ out, will undoubtedly be done in “ such a manner as will make a great “ Noise. We all know him well; he’s “ a brave Man, a good Officer, and “ well born. Should his Majesty ever “ hear that he’s gone over to our E- “ nemies, he possibly may enquire in- “ to the Reasons of it. The World “ will certainly say, that I was the “ Cause of it, because I refus’d to “ grant him a Favour that is indulg’d “ a Lacquey, when we consider the “ Informations; for, in Fact, what “ have you against him? Nothing “ but Letters which are far from pro- “ ving any thing against him; where- “ as the Instruments that are drawn up “ in his Favour, plainly prove his In- “ nocence.

The Chan-  
 cellor advi-  
 ses his Son  
 to get the  
 Author par-  
 don’d.

LET

1700.



“LET me advise, we should not  
 “embarrass our selves with this Affair;  
 “you are sensible that we have so ma-  
 “ny Enemies already who envy us,  
 “that we need not go about to make  
 “our selves more. Be it our Endeav-  
 “ours to do Justice, and then let the  
 “rest take its Course.

“AND in order that we may not be  
 “answerable for the Event, let us  
 “send the Informations, the private  
 “Letters, and a Blank Pardon to  
 “Mr. *Lebret*, *First President and In-*  
 “*tendant in Provence*. As he is a Man  
 “of great Justice, Wisdom, and Hu-  
 “manity, we must desire him to make  
 “a full Enquiry into the Affair, and  
 “grant a Pardon in case he judges it  
 “requisite. In doing this, we shall  
 “certainly screen our selves from Cen-  
 “sure, let what will be the Conse-  
 “quence”.

A Friend  
 advises him  
 not to fly  
 his Country

THE *Sieur de la Touche*, first Clerk  
 to Mr. *de Pontchartrain*, my particular  
 Friend, being inform'd of all that pass'd  
 between the Chancellor and the Mi-  
 nister, writ to me to advise me in-  
 stantly not to leave *France*; that a Par-  
 don had been sent to Mr. *Lebret*, which  
 indeed he was order'd not to give into  
 my Hands, 'till he had examin'd whe-  
 ther my Case really deserv'd it; but  
 that as he was sure I could never be

guilty

guilty of so black an Action as was laid to my Charge, there was just Reason to believe, that every thing would be done to my Satisfaction.

HE further observ'd, that I ought to set every Engine at work, in order to prove my Innocence, and confound the Malice of my Accusers; and after repeating several times, That I ought to use all my Endeavours to obtain the Magistrate's Protection, since he was to pronounce my Fate, he concluded with informing me of all the Particulars abovemention'd.

THIS Advice gave a quite different Turn to all my Resolutions. I now no longer resolv'd to leave *France*, and studied only how I might best ingratiate my self with Mr. *Lebret*; for this Purpose I engag'd Mr. *Fourville* Governor of *Marseilles*, and Mr. *de Ville-neuve* my Kinsman, to employ their Endeavours in my Behalf. They were both intimate Friends of the Intendant, and serv'd me to the utmost of their Power at this Juncture; tho' indeed the Latter scrupled it at first, because I had made use of a Pistol, whereas it was absolutely forbid by the Laws to be employ'd in the manner I had done it. However, I told him, that since People made no Scruple to carry Pistols on a Journey, and

Is resolv'd to comply with it, and justify himself.



1700.



and fire them upon Occasion; it ought not to be look'd upon as strange that I had carried these Arms about me to defend my self, as I was involv'd in so unhappy an Affair, whence I might justly apprehend, that my Enemies intended to use foul Play. Lastly, I represented to him, that he ought to remember I did not fire 'till I was absolutely forc'd to do it; and that in case I had not had them about me, the Wretch I had to deal with would certainly have knock'd my Brains out.

The First President enquires into the Affair, and discharges him.

THO' these Gentlemen engag'd so warmly in my Affair, yet the first President being resolv'd to examine the Particulars of it, and not take any Man's Word for it, sent private Orders to enquire upon the Spot; when the Answers agreeing exactly with the Informations which had been given against me, the Magistrate put the Pardon into my Hands, and heighten'd this Act of Justice with a thousand Compliments and Civilities, which I have since found to be sincere and unaffected.

The Author's Gratitude.

HIS Son who succeeded to his Employments, and now fills his Place with so much Honour, has always indulg'd me his Protection; so that I should think myself ungrateful, did I let

1700!



et slip this Opportunity of publishing to the World, the numberless Favours I have received from that Family. I shall now say no more on this head, because I shall have Occasion to touch upon it hereafter.

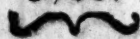
IMMEDIATELY after I was got clear of this unlucky Affair, I came to *Toulon*, where my Absence had given my Enemies an Opportunity of spreading a thousand Particulars to my Disadvantage. I shall not relate the numberless Disputes in which I was engag'd, and the ill Treatment I receiv'd, since it would but tire the Reader; however, I triumph'd easily over them all.

Returns to  
*Toulon*,

THE only Circumstance that now gave me any Pain, was my Mistress's invincible Obstinacy, who persisted in declaring she was with Child; for I knew it to be a mere Sham. However, she asserted the contrary so confidently, and even mention'd the Time when she was to lie-in, that I knew not what to think, when a Servant that had liv'd with her, whom I had paid very regularly for some time, and by that means won her over to my Interest; came and told me, that her Mistress had, for a trifling Sum, brib'd a big-bellied Woman to send her Child to her, the Moment she should be

His Mistress  
still affirms  
she is with  
Child.

1700.



He eludes  
her Impos-  
sition of  
falsly swear-  
ing a Child  
to him.

be deliver'd, and that it was to pass  
for mine.

THIS Circumstance was of too great  
Importance to be overlook'd. The  
Woman with Child, terrified at my  
threatning to have her hang'd, in case  
she did not make an ample Confession,  
own'd the whole Fraud, and begg'd  
ten thousand Pardons. I promis'd she  
should be safe, provided she would  
immediately make her Affidavit be-  
fore a Judge, of all she had then con-  
fess'd to me. She did not scruple to  
do this; upon which, in order to se-  
cure myself compleatly for the future  
from all such Broils, I gave in a Pe-  
tition, upon which it was order'd, that  
when my Mistress should cry out, she  
should be oblig'd to send for a Do-  
ctor and Surgeon, who were then ap-  
pointed to be present at her Delivery.  
This Precaution disconcerted all her  
Measures, and from that Moment she  
never once mention'd her being with  
Child.

The Com-  
mand of a  
Ship is gi-  
ven him.

WHILST I was thus employ'd in  
extricating myself out of these several  
Difficulties, and carrying on my Suit,  
I received Orders to command a Fri-  
gate of sixteen Guns, and the *Sieur*  
*Clairon* one of Eight, and to sail im-  
mediately from *Toulon* in order to cruize  
in the *Adriatic* Gulph.

THE



THE Accession of *Philip V.* to the Crown of *Spain*, had occasion'd a rupture between *France* and the *Em- per- re*, as was before observ'd. Prince *Eugene* was at the Head of a large Body of Troops, in order to oppose our forces in the *Milanese*. As he was in want of all Necessaries, the Country not affording Subsistence for his Army, it would have been impossible for him to have staid there any time, had he not been succour'd daily, especially from *Croatia*, which belong'd to the Emperor, and particularly from the Cities of *Fiume*, *Trieste*, *Boucari*, and *Seigna*, situated on the *Adriatic*; now I was sent into the *Gulph*, purposely to intercept the Succours.

1700.

The Rea-  
sons of his  
being sent  
out to  
cruize,

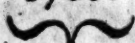
THIS was a very dangerous Com- mission, and extremely difficult to be put in Execution; for notwithstanding that on one Side, the Court was absolutely resolv'd to cut off a Communication that was so advantageous to the Enemy; yet they were desirous of not disobliging the *Venetians*, who hitherto stood Neuter, tho' the *Impe- rialists* had done all that lay in their Power to engage them in their Interest.

Difficulty  
of this En-  
terprize;

ON the other side, there was no room to doubt that the *Venetians*, who pretend to the Sovereignty of the *Adria-*

Because of  
the *Vene-*  
*tians*.

1701.



*Adriatic*, would take Umbrage to see in their Dominions, the King of France's Ships combat a Power with which the Republic was in Amity, and which at the same time it assisted under hand.

He is advis'd to decline the Command.

IN this delicate Affair of serving his Majesty, and not offending the *Venetians*, the Minister had so limited my Instructions, that in case I presum'd to deviate never so little from them, I had the worst to fear, either from the Court or the *Venetians*, in case I should happen to fall into their Clutches. My Brother, whom I acquainted with the Orders I had receiv'd, advis'd me not to accept of the Commission, but to feign an Indisposition.

He is resolv'd to accept it,

HOWEVER, I had a quite different Idea of the Matter, and accepted the Command with so much the more Alacrity, as I was persuaded it might do me Honour, would contribute to my Fortune; or, since it would give me an Opportunity of resuming my former Employment, would suspend at least for some time, the Anxiety which the unhappy Situation of my Affairs fill'd me with.

Sets sail.

ACCORDINGLY, I set sail with the *Sieur Clairon*, and pursuant to my Instructions, lay at Anchor before

*Brin-*

Brindisi, in the Kingdom of Naples, 1701.  
 at the Mouth of the *Adriatic*, where  
 was to hoist the *Spanish* Flag, being  
 absolutely forbid to put out any other  
 in the *Gulph*.

HAVING met with foul Weather  
 ever since our setting sail, we were  
 soon separated; and the Winds were  
 so contrary, that I was three Weeks  
 in my Course from *Toulon* to *Sardinia*;  
 and at last being unable to ride out the  
 Storm, was forc'd to put into *Ca-*  
*segliari*.

I sent my Lieutenant a-shore, to  
 compliment the Vice-Roy and the  
 Archbishop, to whom I sent word,  
 that the *Chevalier de Forbin* was come  
 to make good the Promise he had  
 made him at *Marseilles*, of paying him  
 a Visit. The Prelate was overjoy'd to  
 hear I was in the Road, return'd me  
 the Compliment, as did likewise the  
 Vice-Roy.

THE next Day I went a-shore, when  
 I visited them both. The Archbishop  
 having given me his Blessing seven or  
 eight times, embrac'd me tenderly, and  
 oblig'd me to dine with him. We  
 were splendidly entertain'd, and a *Spa-*  
*niard* would have been highly satisfied,  
 but it was scarce possible for a *French-*  
*man* to relish the Feast; however I eat,  
 because I was forc'd to it.

THE



1701.

Treated by  
the Arch-  
bishop.

THE Archbishop told me, I should be excommunicated, in case I did not dine with him every Day, so long as I staid in the Harbour. "So I will," says I, my Lord, provided you will give me leave to be your Cook, which he consented to. I indeed superintended his Kitchen, so that we eat'd deliciously all the time we staid in the Port, which was but six Days. The Prelate thought me a much better Cook than his own, who was a Spaniard. At my setting sail he sent all Sorts of Refreshments on Board, and loaded me with Blessings, which to say the Truth, I did not at that time esteem so much as Provisions.

He sees a  
Meteor.

FROM *Cagliari* I continued my Course, and meeting with a contrary Wind near *Cape Passaro*, on the Coast of *Sicily*, I was oblig'd to shelter myself, and cast Anchor. In the Night Word was brought me, that a new Sun appear'd on the Horizon; upon which I got upon Deck, and saw plainly a great Fire in the Air, which shone bright enough to read a Letter by. Tho' it blew very hard, the Meteor was immoveable, and after burning for two Hours, disappear'd by insensible Degrees.

The Crew  
are terrified  
at it,

THE Pilots, the Sailors and the whole Crew, who were very much frightened,

1701.

righted, look'd upon it as the sure sign of an impending Storm, so that I could not get them to stir; and tho' I assur'd them that this Fire proceeded wholly from the Exhalations that arose from Mount *Ætna*, which was just by, yet it was impossible for me to persuade them it was so; and they did not recover from their Terror, till we were got in Sight of *Brindisi*, where we arriv'd safe, and had not met with any Disaster, except the contrary Winds, which we were continually oblig'd to struggle with.

UPON our Arrival, I hung out *French* Colours, and fir'd a Gun. At this Signal, Don *Lewis Ferreira* the Governour of the Citadel, who had expected me some Days before, came on Board, and brought me two *Spanish* Flags, which had been sent him from *Naples*, with Orders to deliver them to me. The next Day I writ to the Marquis de *Bidache*, the Governor of the Province, to signify my Arrival. We were to have a Conference, and he appointed a Place about four Leagues from *Brindisi*, where I acquainted him with my Instructions. He gave me several Hints, which were afterwards of Advantage to me; and at last, after having duly weigh'd every thing, we agreed upon the Exploits

His Conference with the Marquis de *Bidache*.

1701.  ploits I was to attempt, and the Success I was to expect from him.

He is reinforced by two Ships.

MATTERS being thus agreed upon I return'd to lie on Board; for it was dangerous to pass the Night a-shore in *Italy*, at that Season of the Year. I took with me a Pilot, who was very well acquainted with the *Gulph*, and was going upon my Duty, when two of the King's Frigats arrived, sent by Count *d'Estrées* from *Naples*, with Orders to join me, and be under my Command.

Meets with the *Sieur Clairon*.

ONE of these Frigates, commanded by Mr. *de Beaucaire*, was a ten-gun Ship, and the other commanded by Mr. *de Fougis*, carried twelve. As both of them were in want of Provisions, and of being refitted, I left them at *Brindisi*, and set sail for *Duras*, a Sea-Port belonging to the Grand Signior, where I met with the *Sieur Clairon*.

He returns a cruising.

At my leaving *Toulon*, the Court had assur'd me, that the *French* Consul would furnish me at *Duras* with whatever Provisions might be necessary for the Squadron; however, the Country was so poor, and unprovided, that they could scarce furnish me with Bread from Day to Day, which oblig'd me to go out a cruising again.



SUC SCARCE was I got in the *Gulph*, 1701.  
 out the foul Weather forc'd me to go  
 upon and cast Anchor before *Courchoula*, sub-  
 t was ect to the Republic of *Ragusa*. Du-  
 ore in ing my Stay here, a Mendicant Friar  
 took belonging to a Monastery of Obser-  
 well vantines (a Sort of Cordeliers) came  
 was on Board, and begg'd my Charity. He  
 vo of was born in *Provence*, and was call'd  
 t by *Sabattier*. I bestow'd a large Alms,  
 h Or and afterwards falling into Discourse  
 Com with him, enquir'd whether there was  
 a great deal of Game about his Con-  
 anded vent; he answer'd, Yes; upon which,  
 n-gun "Father, says I, since the Wind con-  
 d by tinues contrary, and as it will be  
 As "impossible for me to sail from hence,  
 Provi "some of my Crew shall go a shoot-  
 I left ing, while the rest fish here, and  
 r Du "to-morrow I'll dine with you."  
 Grand ACCORDINGLY the next Day I  
 Sieur sent my Cook and Steward to prepare  
 the Dinner: Our People had little  
 Court Sport in the Woods, but we got a  
 Con- great Quantity of excellent Fish.  
 with BEING come to the Convent, I  
 ecessa- found all the Friars waiting for me at  
 r, the he Door, headed by their Supe-  
 npro- rior. They immediately carried me  
 urnish to Church, where Mass was said, du-  
 which ing which the Mendicant Brother who  
 again. came on Board my Ship, plac'd a Ba-  
 on just by me. I knew his Design;  
 ARCE VOL. II. D for

A Mendi-  
cant Friar  
comes on  
Board his  
Ship.

He disap-  
points the  
covetous  
Friar.

1701.



for the Alms I had given him the Day before, had set him a-gog; and he did not doubt, but I should drop as liberally into his Bason, as I had before done into his Wallet; but he was mistaken, and I was very glad to disappoint his Greediness.

The Friar endeavours to get an Alms from him.

MASS being ended, the Friar observing I did not put any thing into the Bason, came up to me, and assuming a very devout Air, "Sir, says he, we have a Madonna here, that works great Miracles, particularly for those who use the Sea; should you not be very glad to pray before her?" He imagin'd that this Fetch would succeed better than the other, but I was more cunning than he; "Well Father, says I, I should be heartily glad to have a Sight of her."

A Madonna is shewn him that works great Miracles.

UPON this he open'd a kind of Niche, which shut with two folding Doors, about a Foot and half high, in which there stood a Statue of the Blessed Virgin with the Infant Jesus in her Arms. I knelt down on one Knee, and after praying a Moment or two, I got up, and said in a cold and rallying Tone of Voice, "Well Father, 'tis enough; you may lock up your Chest of Drawers whenever you please." The poor Friar

A Sneer upon the Madonna.

was that h up th Word FR the R certain we ea we tip never tis on It fail, a belong and se I ha ceiv'd on. ven m by Ex er'd would do litt the Le ng on ver, I time ng my I wa the Gz rom t stood Tower

1701.

was so confounded at what I said, that he held down his Head, and lock'd up the Niche, without saying one Word.

FROM the Church we all went to the Refectory, where a handsome Entertainment was provided, of which we eat heartily; but as for the Wine, we tipp'd lustily of it, for this, Friars never scruple to do, especially when tis on Free-cost.

The Friars  
tipp'd heartily.

It being now fine Weather, I set sail, and some Days after took a Bark belonging to the Emperor's Subjects, and set fire to it.

Burns a  
Bark.

I had now for some time clearly perceiv'd what Expedition I was sent upon. The Marquis *de Bidache* had given me some Idea of it, but I found by Experience, the Moment I enter'd the *Gulph*, that the *Venetians* would dupe me; and that I should do little or nothing, in case I follow'd the Letter of my Instructions, in cruising only upon the *Imperialists*. However, I dissembled, and obey'd for some time my Orders, without once opening my Lips.

Resolves to  
go beyond  
his Instru-  
ctions.

I was inform'd, as I went higher up the *Gulph*, that about a few Leagues from the Place where I then lay, there stood a famous Castle, having four Towers, call'd *Portrée*, belonging to

Impos'd  
upon by  
false Intel-  
ligence.



1701. the Emperor; which serv'd, as I was told, as a Magazine to the Enemy, and was fill'd with Ammunition and Provisions, for the Service of Prince *Eugene*. A Man ought never to give Credit to what he hears in the Army, especially if he be in a suspected Country, or believe too lightly the Particulars which may be told him. This was a false Report; however, as tho' I had known it to be fact, I resolv'd to go and set fire to it, imagining I should do his Majesty the highest Service.

He resolves  
to storm  
the Castle.

IN order to carry on the Enterprize with less Suspicion, I left the *Sieur Clairon's* Frigat in one of the *Venetian* Ports, with only ten Men on Board her, and taking him and the rest of his Crew into my Ship, I set out upon the Expedition; but how great was my Surprize, when I did not find in the Castle, either the Provisions or Ammunition which I had been told of. 'Twas a miserable abandon'd Place; and tho' I went all over it, I did not meet with one Soul.

Is impos'd  
upon.

FINDING the Advice was false, I began to think this was some Stratagem, and that the Frigat was in Danger, as I had left so few Hands on Board her; I therefore immediately

sent

sent  
into  
M  
justl-  
see h  
her.  
away  
Han  
temp  
solv'  
diate  
take  
a lit  
tians  
and  
ny I  
he a  
but  
A  
Impe  
were  
of t  
Arri  
the  
unfu  
fore  
ces.  
and  
kill'  
grea  
man  
ther  
esca

sent the *Sieur Clairon* back, who got into his Boat with all his Crew. 1701.

My Apprehensions were but too justly grounded, for *Clairon* could not see his Frigat in the place he had left her. They had been oblig'd to sail away, to prevent their falling into the Hands of the *Imperialists*, who attempted to seize her. As he was resolv'd to come up with her immediately, hearing the Course they had taken, he follow'd her, and landed in a little Island belonging to the *Venetians*. 'Twas one Sunday Morning; and he suppos'd he should not run any Risk, in leaving his Boat, whilst he and his Crew went to hear Mass; but he paid dear for it.

*Clairon's*  
Frigat  
gone.

A few Hours before he landed, the *Imperialists*, who had the chas'd Frigat, were gone a-shore on the other Side of this Island; a little after *Clairon's* Arrival, the *Venetians* had told them the *French* were at Mass, unarm'd, and unsuspecting of any thing, and therefore he might easily cut them to Pieces. The *Imperialists* took the Hint, and falling upon our People, they kill'd *Clairon*, and cut to pieces the greatest part of the Crew. A Woman was so humane, as to hide six of them in an Oven, but very few more escap'd; and the Enemy seiz'd upon

*Clairon*  
kill'd  
treache-  
rously, and  
most of his  
Crew.

1701. the Ship-Boat, and made off with it, with four wounded Prisoners, whom they carried into Slavery. As for the Frigate, it was got to *Ancona*, where she was safe, this Place being subject to the Pope.

THIS News, which I heard soon after, made me very uneasy. I sail'd to *Querché*, and demanded Satisfaction of the Governour, and complain'd with so much the more Haughtiness, since I had but too just Grounds to demand it, as the Slaughter had been made in the *Venetian* Territories, in the midst of a populous Village; especially since not a Soul had endeavour'd to succour the *French*.

Resolves to  
complain  
about it at  
*Venice*.

UPON my not receiving a satisfactory Answer, I resolv'd to set out for *Venice*, and complain about it to the *French* Embassador, whom I was very glad to visit upon several other Accounts: For this Purpose, I got a Certificate of Health, and sailing towards *Venice*, I enter'd the Port of *Kiossa*, where after changing my Clothes, I got into a little Boat, and arriv'd at the City, which is not above twelve Leagues from hence.

He waits  
upon the  
*French* Em-  
bassador,  
and desires  
to have his

UPON my Arrival, I was carried to the Office of Health, where they kept me above three Hours, obliging me to go on Board, and then land a-  
gain,



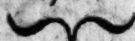
1701.

Instructions  
less re-  
strain'd.

gain, above ten times, infomuch that I thought they would never have done. They ask'd me a thousand Questions, to all which I only answer'd, that I was one of the King's Officers, and waited to speak with the French Ambassador. After many Days, I was at last permitted Entrance, whereupon I waited upon Count de Charmon our Ambassador, whom I found playing at Ombre with the Pope's Nuncio, and the Ambassador of Malta.

WHEN the Game was done, which was not very soon, I told his Excellency what had happen'd to the French, and the Sieur Clairon's Death, but found he had been inform'd of it before; I afterwards spoke of my Expedition, which I told him would come to nothing, in case I should be oblig'd to obey the Letter of my Instructions; that the Evil our Court would remedy, was not occasion'd so much by the Emperor's Subjects, as the Venetians themselves, who serv'd the Empire under their own Flag; that were it not for the Assistance of the Republic, the Imperialists would have neither Vessels nor Sailors sufficient, to convey to Prince Eugene the Provisions, &c. he daily receiv'd; so that either my Instructions must be less restrain'd,

1701.



The Embassador's Advice.

by permitting me to attack the *Venetians*, whenever I should find them succouring the Enemy under-hand, or that it would be to no Purpose for me to continue in the *Gulph*.

THE Embassador, after listening attentively to what I had to say, answer'd, that he would not pretend to interfere with the Orders which had been given me. However, knowing I was in the right, he advis'd with the *Spanish* Embassador, and Cardinal *d'Eftrées* about it. The latter, upon his coming out of the Conclave, after the Accession of *Clement XI.* to the Pontificate, had been order'd to go and reside at *Venice*, and especially to take care that the *Venetians* observ'd an exact Neutrality.

Waits on the *Spanish* Embassador, &c.

THE next Day, the two Embassadors went to the Cardinal, where I represented to them what I had observ'd the Day before to the *French* Embassador. I shew'd them my Instructions, and plainly prov'd, that so long as I obey'd them exactly, it would be impossible for me to answer the Expectations of the Court.

Cardinal *d'Eftrées* is offended.

THE Cardinal, disgusted at my not addressing him first, and impos'd upon by the pompous Promises of the *Venetians*, (for they had long amus'd him, and by their artful Words had made

made  
me v  
medl  
was  
Tenc  
Cour  
not a  
had  
had u  
comi  
know  
ever  
he m  
TH  
havin  
the E  
very  
ders,  
there  
TH  
proac  
sent  
Cond  
Conf  
nal;  
turn  
at Q  
gat,  
pleas  
me to  
stant  
admi

1701.

made him believe any thing) said to me with a haughty Air, that I intermeddled in too many Things; that I was bound to obey implicitly the Tenor of my Instructions; that the Court had certain Views which I was not allow'd to pry into; and that as I had nothing else to communicate, I had undertaken a needless Journey, in coming to *Venice*; and that I ought to know, *he* was to be address'd, whenever I had any thing to propose, since he manag'd all the Negotiations.

THUS ended our Conference; and having at my going away hinted to the Embassador, that the Cardinal was very haughty, he shrugg'd his Shoulders, and answer'd; *'Tis so indeed, but there's no helping it.*

THAT I might have nothing to reproach myself with, I immediately sent Advice to the Court, both of the Conduct of the *Venetians*, and the Conference I had with the Cardinal; after which I left *Venice*, and return'd on Board. I was scarce arriv'd at *Querché*, where I had left my Frigate, but the *Venetians*, who were displeas'd to see me in the *Gulph*, oblig'd me to leave the Port. From that Instant an Order was publish'd, not to admit me into any of the Ports of the

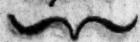
Order'd by the *Venetians* not to enter any of their Ports.

D s

Re-



1701.



Republic; which exasperated me so much, that I resolv'd to revenge it whenever I had an Opportunity.

He resolves  
to attack  
the *Imperia-*  
*lists*.

ABOUT that Time, Messieurs de *Beaucaire* and *Fougis* joyn'd me. I gave them Instructions, appointed their Cruisings, and we went and station'd our selves in a Latitude under which the *Imperialists* were to pass.

A Vessel  
burnt.

SOME Days after, the Sieur de *Fougis* took a Vessel which he burnt. This was the only one that appear'd since we had station'd our selves; and indeed the *Imperialists* had no occasion to send out any now, the *Venetian* Vessels being more than sufficient to carry whatever Succours might be wanted.

Is in want of  
Provisions.

As we thus only trifled away our Time, I grew very uneasy, we now beginning to want Provisions. I have already observ'd, that we were not to expect any either from *Brindisi* or *Durra*; I writ to Cardinal de *Janfon* at *Rome*, to desire him to order a thousand Quintals of Bisket to be made for me at *Ancona*. Those Provisions which came seasonably; the Monies which the Embassador supply'd me with from time to time, and my own Industry, were so effectual, that I was never in want of any thing.

His Crew  
enlarg'd.

ALL that now remain'd for me to do, was to reinforce my Crew, which had

1701.

had never been considerable. The other Frigats were also in want of Sailors; but the Embassador supply'd me also upon this Occasion, and sent me three-score *French* Deserters, all stout Soldiers, who had fled into the *Venetian* Territories; these I distributed among the Squadron, after having re-inforc'd my own Crew.

As we were refus'd Entrance into all the Sea-Ports of the Republic, the Squadron was oblig'd to cast Anchor every Evening, in order to shelter themselves from the sudden Gusts which frequently arise in the *Adriatic*. Not to mention the Fatigue this put us to, we were also infested every Night by several Vessels with Oars, which the Enemy had mann'd with *Ouscos*, a warlike People, who were ever at our Heels, so that we were oblig'd to be under Arms almost every Night.

ONE Day as we were going to get Wood, I landed fifty Men in an Island belonging to the *Venetians*, and had given proper Instructions to the Officer who commanded; however he did not observe them, but marching in great Disorder, they fell into an Ambuscade of the *Ouscos*. These kill'd or wounded two and twenty of his Men, took thirteen Prisoners, and would have seiz'd upon the Ship-boat, had I not fir'd

They are  
infested.

Fifty of his  
Men kill'd.

1701. fir'd the Cannon upon them. This unhappy Accident exasperated me so much, that I dismiss'd the Officer, and would never see him more; and never employ'd him afterwards, but to fetch Provisions from *Ancona* for the Squadron.

One of his Ships engag'd with the *Oufcos*.

HITHERTO I had done little or nothing in the *Gulph*. All our Exploits consisted in our taking the Imperial Vessel abovementioned, and two *Sicilian* Barks loaded with Salt for the Enemy. They were both taken by the *Sieur de Beaucaire*, who immediately after, going to cast Anchor as usual, in the Evening, was so vigorously attack'd by the *Oufcos*, in order to recover the Barks, that he was oblig'd to cut his Cable.

They retire.

HOWEVER, he made a vigorous Defence, and work'd the Ship so well, that being assisted by a small Gale, he sav'd his Prizes. I arriv'd about four Hours after, upon hearing the Noise of the Cannon, when I chas'd the Enemy, who row'd off; and I sent the two Vessels to *Ancona*, where the Salt was sold in the King's Name.

His Uneasiness for his little Success.

THIS was all we had yet done; which vex'd me so much the more, as I daily had Opportunities of harassing the Enemy, and could not think of any Expedient by which I might make the

Court



Court sensible, how necessary it was 1701.  
to alter my Instructions.

Nor but that there were other Services for me to do in the *Gulph*, without infringing my Instructions. I had already observ'd, that as the Emperor's Ports were unprovided with Troops, and poorly fortified, I might easily have incommoded them, with very little Expence. I had even taken Measures in order to attempt something that way, supposing I had no better Employment; and for that Purpose I had desir'd the Viceroy of *Naples* to send me a Reinforcement. But besides that this Project cou'd not now be put in Execution, because I believ'd I was not strong enough to attempt it; this was not the chief Motive for which I was sent, so that I thought it would be of more Advantage to his Majesty, to continue cruising, provided my Instructions gave me a little more Liberty.

I therefore writ to the Cardinal and the Ambassador upon this Head, and after having again represented to them the Insincerity of the *Venetians*, who upon Pretence of standing Neuter, assisted the Enemy to the utmost, and in the most barefac'd manner: I desir'd Leave to attack the *Venetians*, whom I was sure to detect in their Treachery; and knowing this would never be granted,

A new Project.

His Request  
to the French  
Ambassador

1701.

granted, I insisted, that at least they should oblige the Republic to give Passes for all Vessels that sail'd in the *Gulph*, in order that I might be able to distinguish a Friend from an Enemy.

FOR the better Understanding this Circumstance, the Reader is to know, that the *Venetians*, who, as we before observ'd, ascribe to themselves the Sovereignty of the *Adriatic*, never give Passes to such of their Vessels as sail out of the *Gulph*.

The Cunning of the  
*Venetians*.

How reasonable soever this Request might be, considering the State of our Affairs; the Republic, who on one Side were determin'd to favour the Emperor, but would not seem to infringe the Neutrality, would never listen to my Demand; for the *Venetians* plainly perceiv'd, that in case they gave Passes, they must do all that lay in their Power to prevent such of their Subjects as had taken any, to continue the Transports we complained of; or that otherwise, their Intelligence with the *Imperialists* would appear too barefac'd; and that all which should be found without Passes, would be liable to be seiz'd, whenever they dar'd to venture out at Sea.

He resolves  
to act be-  
yond his In-  
structions.

THEY therefore refus'd to gratify our Request, and excus'd themselves with

1701.

they with saying, that it would not be proper for them to derogate from their own Rights; so that my Letters were unsuccessful; and Answer was made me, That I should continue my Expedition, and not trouble my self with any thing else. Shock'd at this Answer, and weary of the wretched Service to which I was condemn'd, I resolv'd, let what would happen, to hazard a little; imagining that the Court might possibly not be displeas'd, in case I did not comply entirely with my Instructions.

WHATEVER Reason I might have to His Regard be dissatisfied with the *Venetians*, I had for the *Ven-* hitherto taken the utmost Care not to *tians*. give them the least Umbrage; 'tis true indeed, that as they always sail'd without Passes, I stopt such of their Vessels as came in my way; but then as the Masters of them always assur'd me they were loaded upon the Republic's Account, and were sailing to some of their Ports, I always dismiss'd them at first.

HOWEVER, as I afterwards perceiv'd They impose upon him. that they impos'd upon me, I was not quite so easy; and resolving not to take their Word altogether, I determin'd to accompany them to the Cities whither they said they were bound, in order to enquire of the Podestà if what



1701.



what they affirm'd was true; but and rep  
tho' I plainly perceiv'd that the Po so, the  
destats and Masters of the Vessels pruden  
had conniv'd together to put a Trick tween  
upon me; I nevertheless pretended al THE  
ways to believe them upon their bare to give  
Words, and never once molested any being i  
of their Vessels. writ,

He exceeds  
his Instru-  
ctions.

BUT at last, being quite tir'd with Hands  
this Series of Insincerity, I was re tians;  
solv'd not to be play'd upon any were f  
ger; and ventur'd, as I before ob ty no  
serv'd, to throw a Quantity of Ammu prejud  
nition and Provisions over-board, which War;  
I found in certain Vessels, the Masters imagin  
whereof, by their Answers, made me way;  
suspect a Fraud; but then I did not Emba  
do the least Injury either to the Crew, my Pr  
or the Vessels, and dismiss'd them un did n  
hurt. or ord

Complaints  
to the Senate  
against the  
Author.

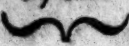
HOWEVER, notwithstanding my TH  
Tenderness on these Occasions, the berty  
Owners of the Vessels made heavy same  
Complaints against me. I had I had  
to be interrupted in so advantageous a From  
Commerce, they went to *Venice*, where to th  
they made grievous Complaints of the the lo  
Injury I had done them in their own Vesse  
Seas. The Senate, offended at my Pro them  
ceedings, made themselves Principals in T  
the Affair; and complained to the Em me i  
bassador, who terrified at their Threats, lence  
writ to Court in the strongest Terms;  
and

and represented, that in case I went on 1701.  
 so, there was reason to fear my Im-  
 prudence might occasion a Rupture be-  
 tween the two Crowns.

THE Court indeed was desirous not Cuning of  
 to give Umbrage to the Republic; but the French  
 being inform'd by what-I my self had Court.  
 writ, and what they heard by other  
 Hands, of the Conduct of the *Vene-*  
*tians*; and convinc'd that in case they  
 were suffer'd to observe the Neutrali-  
 ty no better, it would be almost as  
 prejudicial to their Interests as an open  
 War; they resolv'd, directly as I had  
 imagin'd, to let me go on my own  
 way; so that in their Answer to the  
 Embassador, they highly disapprov'd  
 my Proceedings; but at the same time  
 did not make me the least Reproach,  
 nor order me to discontinue.

THIS Conduct, as it left me at Li- He burns  
 berty to act as I pleas'd, was at the nine or ten  
 same time a tacit Approbation of what Vessels.  
 I had done, and encourag'd me to go on.  
 From that Instant, so far from scrupling  
 to throw into the Sea whatever I had  
 the least Suspicion of, I even seiz'd the  
 Vessels, and burnt nine or ten of  
 them.

THE Clamours broke out against  
 me in *Venice* with much greater Vio- He is re-an-  
 lence than before, but I took very lit- mated,  
 tle

1701.  the Notice of them. I reveng'd the King on the *Venetians* for their Insincerity; I reveng'd the barbarous Massacre of *Clairon*, and his Crew; and reveng'd my self for the several Hardships they had made me suffer. Less than this would have set me in a Flame; and indeed I made very quick Work, insomuch that I did not suffer the most inconsiderable Bark to pass me.

He stops  
four-score  
Vessels.

I at one time stopt near four-score Vessels that were going to *Trieste*, which I knew were design'd to carry a large Quantity of Ammunition and Provisions. I at first resolv'd to burn them, however, after a little Reflection, I did not think proper to venture at so bold a Stroke, as it could not fail of making a great Noise; for which Purpose in giving Advice to Cardinal *d'Estrees* of this Seizure, I desir'd his Orders to go greater Lengths.

Goes a Cruising, and  
blocks up  
*Trieste*.

HIS Eminence answer'd as usual, that I meddled with too many things, and must release my Prizes. I was oblig'd to obey, but 'twas with the greatest Reluctance; and thus it was impossible for me to go a Step farther, after having sent the Court Notice of what had pass'd. Upon receiving certain Advice that the Vessels I had releas'd were gone into the Port of *Trieste*,



1701.



thence they were to sail loaded with Ammunition and Provisions, and a considerable Number of Soldiers, which were to reinforce Prince Eugene's Army; I set sail with my two Frigats, and cruising before the Harbour, block'd it up so close, that nothing could come out of it without being seiz'd.

WHILE I lay here, I receiv'd a new Answer from Court. Tho' a great many Particulars were mention'd in it, yet there was not the least Notice taken of my Conduct towards the *Venetians*. This gave me the highest Pleasure; and had these Letters but come a little sooner, I should not have consulted the Cardinal about what was best to be done with the Vessels I had seiz'd.

Receives a  
new Answer  
from Court.

HAVING now still greater Reasons to believe, that the Court did not disapprove my Proceedings hitherto; I drew Consequences from hence for my future Conduct, and immediately began to burn all such *Venetian* Ships as came in my way, and at the same time did not neglect the Blockade. This gave occasion to fresh Complaints, which was no more than I expected. The Embassador wrote again to Court, and receiv'd the same Answer as before; but as for my self, they did not

Burns several Vessels.

once.

1701. once reproach me for any thing I had done.

An English  
Ship in the  
Port fitted  
out against  
him.

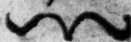
IN the mean time, Prince *Eugene's* Army was in great Want of Succours; since my burning their Vessels, they had receiv'd very little; and the blocking up of *Trieste*, and by that means the Ammunition and Provisions, put them out of Hopes of receiving any for some time; when the Emperor's Embassador at *Venice*, being resolv'd to get a Passage for those Vessels at any Rate, secretly got an *English* Ship of fifty Guns, which happen'd to be at that time in the Port, to be equipp'd forthwith.

THIS Ship was to sail and attack me, as the Succours were to come out of *Trieste*, under the Convoy of a Frigate of twenty-six Guns, which was to joyn him, in case of Necessity.

He offers  
the Cardinal  
to burn the  
*English* Ship;  
but his Advice is disre-  
garded.

HAVING Advice of this Design for I had my Spies at *Venice*, which gave me an exact Account of all that pass'd; I wrote again to Cardinal d'Es-*trées*, and represented to him the Injury this Armament would do to his most Christian Majesty; that my Vessel carried but sixteen Guns, and I had only two small Frigats more of ten or twelve Guns each; that as the two War-Ships above-mention'd were much stronger than mine, they would drive me

1701.



I had me out of the *Gulph* whenever they pleas'd; after which they might carry whatever Succours they thought proper to Prince *Eugene*; but that in case his Eminence would give me leave, I'd engage to get the Start of them, and go and burn that Ship in the Harbour, tho' it lay under *St. Mark*. However, the Cardinal despis'd my Hint; and writing ever in the same Strain, order'd me to obey my Commands, and not concern my self with what was doing at *Venice*.

A little after this Answer, the Embassador, who also had notice given him of this Armament, and of its being carried on, mention'd it to the Cardinal. His Eminence then began to open his Eyes, and in concert with the Embassador, complained thereof to the Senate, who answer'd; *Let the Chevalier de Forbin leave our Seas, and we'll engage to prevent the Imperialists from succouring Prince Eugene*. Upon these Offers, which undoubtedly were accepted too inconsiderately, the Cardinal dispatch'd a Courier to Court, to know how I was to Act upon this Occasion.

WHILST this was doing, I had Advice, that the King being satisfied with my Service, and fearing lest the Enemy should oppose me with a

The Venetian Senate make a Proposal to the Cardinal at their Court,

Has Advice that the King, well satisfy'd with his Service, has a strong Ar-

Force



1701.

~  
mament  
fitted out  
at Toulon,  
to second  
him.

Force much superiour to my own  
had ordered a strong Armament to be  
fitted out at *Toulon*, under the Com-  
mand of the Count *de Toulouse*, with  
Orders to sail only at first to *Messina*,  
but to enter the Gulph, in case I was  
not strong enough.

His Answer.

To this Advice, which I received  
both from the Court and the Admiral  
I answer'd, that except the Enemy  
made use of a Foreign Assistance,  
my self should be strong enough to  
perform whatever was to be done  
provided they wou'd send me a Frigate  
of fifty or sixty Pieces of Cannon.  
This indeed was all I wanted; for I  
had already demanded of the Vice-  
Roy of *Naples*, with whom I had al-  
ways maintain'd a Correspondence, a  
few Galliot's with Oars, in order to op-  
pose those of the Enemy.

He receives  
Orders to  
sail out of  
the Gulph  
to go to  
*Brindisi*,  
which he  
obeys.

WHILST this was doing, Cardi-  
nal *de Estrées* received, by the return  
of his Courier, an Order for me to  
leave the Gulph. The Court, upon  
the Advice which his Eminence, and  
the Embassador had sent, supposing  
that the *Venetians* wou'd hereafter be  
more sincere than before, thought pro-  
per to give them this satisfaction. I  
was therefore ordered to sail to *Brin-  
disi* with my Squadron; and there  
wait with patience till I receiv'd  
further

further  
whom  
citly.

IN

by Am  
count

been f

out to  
Courie

T H

the E

my  
serv'd,

Convo

to that

ture,  
Boats

ors to  
Board

diately

and  
Admin

the Y

Port,

T H  
Cardi

himse

nate,  
again

preac

very  
wer;

further Orders from the Cardinal, 1701.  
whom I was ordered to obey implicitly.

IN my way to *Brindisi*, I past by *Ancona*, where I made up the Account of the Provisions which had been sent to me; and had been there out two Days, before I received a Courier from the Cardinal, with Orders to sail back into the Gulph. A Counter-Order is sent him.

THE *Venetians*, in concert with the Emperor's Ministers, had wanted my Absence, as was before observ'd, to open a Passage for the Convoy which I blocked up at *Trieste*; so that three Days after my departure, the *Imperialists* causing several Boats mann'd with Soldiers and Sailors to enter the Port, put them on Board the *English* Ship, which immediately hoisting the Emperor's Flag and Streamer saluted the *Venetian* Admiral, who return'd it; after which the *English* Ship sail'd out of the Port, and gone towards *Trieste*. In the mean time, the Imperial Vessels sail out of the Port with the Succours; by the help of the *English* Vessel.

THIS Action at last open'd the Cardinal's Eyes; who, enrag'd to see himself put upon, went to the Senate, and there made bitter complaints against the Republick, and their breach of Promise; however, he was very little satisfied with their Answer; which was, that his Imperial Ma- The Cardinal complains to the Senate of *Venice*, but to no purpose.

1701.



Has Orders  
to take or  
burn the  
*English*  
Ship.

He repre-  
sents the  
impossibi-  
lity of it ;  
but yet  
offers to  
attempt it.

Majesty's Embassador had order'd this Armament to be made in their Port, and that it was not in their power to hinder it.

'Twas upon this Answer, that the Cardinal, exasperated to the highest Degree, to see the *French* contemn'd in such a manner, and himself plaid upon; sent me Orders to return immediately into the Gulph, and to take or burn the *English* Ship which the *Imperialists* had equipp'd.

BUT now 'twas impossible to put this Project in Execution; and thereupon I wrote to the Cardinal, and desir'd him to consider that I had not the two Frigats with me, which were got to *Brindisi*; and that my own carried but sixteen Guns; therefore could not pretend to make Head against a Fifty Gun Ship which had upwards of three hundred Men on Board her; that however, in case he was willing I should venture I would immediately obey his Commands; but that I begg'd him to send me an Order for that purpose in writing; that then I would exert my self to the utmost of my power, and leave the rest to Heaven. The Cardinal who was no less sensible than my self of the difficulty of the Enterprize answer'd



1701.

answer'd, that he was neither a Soldier nor a Sailor; and therefore left me at my Liberty to act as I shou'd think proper.

THE Accompts being clos'd at Ancona, I sail'd for *Brindisi*, where, the next Day, I receiv'd a second Courier from the Cardinal, who ordered me to return forthwith into the Gulph; and to burn all such *Venetian* Vessels as I should light upon without Passes. Had that Order come in time, Prince *Eugene's* Army would have suffer'd very much; however, tho' it came so late, it nevertheless was some Disadvantage to them.

A second Order from the Cardinal to burn all the *Venetian* Vessels.

I was preparing to obey, when the Frigate I had demanded arriv'd. 'Twas commanded by Mr. *de Resson Deschiens*, and had a considerable number of Bombardiers and Bombs on Board. I immediately sent back Mr. *Beaucair's* Frigate to *France*, and also that of the unhappy Mr. *Clairon*, both which wanted very much to be refitted; and having given Mr. *Deschiens* the Command of my own, I dispos'd every thing with all the diligence possible, in order to return into the *Adriatic*.

The Frigate he had demanded arrives.

WHILE I lay at *Brindisi*, the Bishop came and visited me, and I return'd it next Day; this Prelate did not yet exercise his Episcopal Functions,

Visited by the Bishop.

1701.



tions, his Bulls not being yet arriv'd; which were not to be dispatch'd till such time as the King of *Spain*, as King of *Naples*, had acknowledg'd the Pope's Supremacy on that Occasion.

A Complaint from the Abbess of a Convent to the Bishop.

DURING the Conversation a Lay-Brother came to the Bishop, from the Abbess of a Convent in that City, to demand Justice, for the violent Proceedings of the Grand Vicar, who had forbid, under Penalty of Excommunication, all Persons of what Quality or Condition soever, to enter into the Parlours of her Convent. The Bishop answer'd, that he knew nothing of the Order, which he thought unjust; but as he had not yet receiv'd his Bulls, and consequently cou'd not exercise any Jurisdiction in the Diocese, he had nothing to say to the Grand Vicar.

He enquires the Reason of it. The Bishop carries him to the Convent.

I was curious to know what cou'd have given occasion to a Procedure which to me appear'd too rigorous; and directing my self to the Bishop, ' Let ' go and see, my Lord, says I, what's the ' meaning of all this? Undoubtedly ' this Excommunication does not re ' gard you; and for my self, I've no rea ' son to be under any Apprehensions ' since I don't belong to the Diocese. At my saying these words, the Pre

late

1701.

And one of  
the Nuns  
discovers  
an Intrigue.

I late smil'd, and ordering his Coach to be got ready, he carried me to the Monastery. The Abbess and the whole Community made their Complaint, and were all for speaking at once; so that they made such a Noise, that they almost stunn'd the poor Bishop, who cou'd scarce understand them.

WHILST he was endeavouring to calm their Complaints, by promising to make them easy, so soon as it should be in his Power, I whisper'd to one of the Nuns, who frankly told me, that the Grand Vicar being in love with one of the Sisters, and being hated by her, had sent that Prohibition, purely to prevent the Visits of a young Gentleman whom she preferr'd; and upon that account the Grand Vicar was very jealous of him.

He jokes  
with the  
Abbess.

I laughed heartily at the Oddness of the procedure, which was carried so far, as to employ Ecclesiastical Censures, in order to remove a Rival; and going up to the Abbess; 'Madam, says I, with a jocular Air, in case the Grand Vicar continues his Severity, only let me know it; and I'll throw a Bomb into his House, and beat it down.'

He plays  
upon the  
Grand Vi-  
car.

HAVING said this, I took the Paper in which the Prohibition was written, and tearing it to pieces, we



1701. began to joke upon the Grand Vicar, who was for making Love at three-score; and forbad, upon Penalty of Excommunication, his Mistress's preferring a witty, handsome young Gentleman to him. After carrying on the Raillery for some time, I return'd to the Bishop; no ways imagining that the Affair could give me the least Uneasiness; but it happen'd otherwise; as the Reader will find in the sequel.

He has again a Dispute with the Admiral,

THE Night before I left *Brindisi*, a *French* Pilot came to me, and desir'd to purchase two Barks, which the *Sieur Beaucair* had taken, and then lay at *Ancona*, whither I had sent them. I wanted Money, and was therefore overjoy'd that such an Opportunity presented it self. We agreed for six thousand Livres, which were paid me the next Day. The Pilot having made the Purchase, desir'd me to give him a Pass in order that he might sail with them out of the Gulph, which I thought my self indisputably oblig'd to give him; but this occasion'd a fresh Dispute between the Admiral and my self, however I happily extricated my self out of it.

He goes in quest of the Venetian Ships.

IN consequence of the Orders I had receiv'd, I set sail with my fifty-Gun Ship, and was followed by the Frigate

I be  
give  
whic  
fire  
Card  
ger  
Mr.  
give  
seem  
so th  
into  
that  
wher  
fully  
Vesse  
out F  
I C  
lestin  
bove  
surpri  
Amm  
the A  
voyin  
ing n  
them,  
with  
sand  
to B  
Name  
As  
Veneti  
way w  
began

I before commanded, which I had given to Mr. *Deschiens*. The Reasons which had prevented my going to set fire to the *English* Ship, according to Cardinal *d'Estree's* Order, now no longer took place, upon the Arrival of Mr. *Deschiens*. I therefore resolv'd to give his Eminence the Satisfaction he seem'd to have so much at Heart; so that my chief View in returning into the Gulph, was to go in quest of that Ship; to attack and burn her, wheresoever I shou'd meet with her; fully resolved not to spare any *Venetian* Vessels I shou'd meet in my way, without Passes.

I soon had an Opportunity of molesting them; for I had not been above two Days out at Sea, when I surpriz'd several Vessels laden with Ammunition and Provisions, which the *Imperialists* and *Venetians* were conveying, and who were far from thinking me so near them. I attack'd them, and carried off eight Vessels, with twenty five or thirty thousand loads of Corn, which I sent to *Brindisi*, to sell in the King's Name.

He seizes  
eight  
Vessels  
laden with  
Corn.

As my Orders to set fire to all such *Venetian* Vessels as shou'd come in my way without Passes, were very express, I began to burn several; not a Day pass'd,

He burns  
upwards of  
twenty five  
Vessels.

1701.



without my performing some Exploit of that kind. Not to mention the Barks of less Consequence, I soon set fire, at different times to upwards of twenty five Vessels; and as I gave the Plunder of the Sailors to my own Crew, they, overjoy'd at the work, us'd to come and ask me from time to time, whether we shou'd not burn any more.

He meets a  
Venetian  
fifty-Gun  
Ship.

BESIDES these twenty five Vessels, I fell in with a *Venetian* Ship of fifty Guns, which was sailing to *Boucari*, a City subject to the Emperor. This Ship had a Patent in due Form from the Republick; so that I cou'd not attack her, without exceeding my Orders, and committing an Act of Hostility, which in other Circumstances must have been attended with very bad Consequences.

He resolves  
to burn her.

NEVERTHELESS, as I was sure, that the only reason of this Ship's sailing to *Boucari*, was to take in a hundred Sailors, in order to strengthen her Crew; after which she was to go and join the *English* Ship, in order to force me out of the Gulph; I thought I shou'd do the King Service in burning this first, without regarding the Consequences.

He sets fire  
to her,

I accordingly took her, and after having stript the Crew, whom I sent back

back  
ing b  
in or  
time  
thus  
seque  
when  
ceed

T  
Venet

now  
tain o  
of my  
into t  
or of

ver,  
give  
my E

With  
all the

find I  
Hands

Malan  
tow'd

with  
Oars.

FI  
ever t

to go  
to bur

the Ve  
out r

Estre



1701.



back in their own Long-boat, keeping but one of the Sailors Prisoner, in order to make use of him from time to time; I set fire to the Ship; thus taking on myself the whole Consequence of the Event, at a time, when I thought my self bound to exceed all my Instructions.

THIS bold Action alarm'd the *Venetians* so much, that they did not now dare to appear at Sea. The Captain of the *English* Ship having heard of my last Expedition, was returned into the Port, for fear of being taken, or of being forc'd to fight; however, I was absolutely determin'd to give him no Quarter, and to use all my Endeavours to burn his Vessel. With this Resolution, I enquir'd of all the Vessels I seiz'd, where I might find her; and heard from different Hands that she lay in the Port of *Malamoco*, where the *Venetians* had stow'd her, for two Days together, with six *Piottes*, a kind of Vessel with Oars.

He resolves to fire the *English* Ship which was got to *Malamoco*.

FINDING it wou'd be impossible ever to come up with her, I resolv'd to go and attack her in the Port, and to burn her under the very Nose of the *Venetians*. 'Twas a bold Attempt; but not to mention that Cardinal *Estrées* was mighty desirous of having her

He resolves to burn her in the Port.

1701.



her destroy'd; I my self was very glad to pull down the Pride of her Captain, who at his sailing from *Trieste*, had publickly declar'd, he was going to clear the Gulph of all those who infested it; and undertook to wait upon the Senate with the Chevalier *Forbin's* Ears.

He sails  
into *Mala-*  
*moso*.

THE fine Weather favour'd my Attempt. I had taken measures, not to arrive at *Venice* till dark, it being of great Consequence to me not to be known. Being got to the place where I determin'd to stop, in order to dispose of every thing for the Attack, I sent for the *Sieur Deschiens* on Board, when I communicated my Design to him.

Advises  
with the  
Captain of  
the other  
Frigate a-  
bout it.

IT at first appear'd to him so hazardous, that he immediately was against it, and started so many Difficulties as wou'd have made me lay aside my Design, had I not foreseen them; but then I had revolved them in my Mind. 'Sir, says I, I risk much less than you imagine this Attempt. I'm indeed going to attack, in the very Harbour, a Ship surrounded with numberless Vessels, which would all do whatever lay in their power to destroy me; but then consider again, that they have no manner of Notion that I'm

His Rea-  
sons for  
fighting.

' so near them, but on the contrary, 1701.  
' fancy I'm at a great distance from   
' Venice.

' At my Arrival in the Harbour, That all  
' the Ship I intend to attack, and the Crews  
' most of the other Vessels, will have would be  
' very few of their Soldiers and Sail- sleep, or on  
' lers on Board; the several Crews, shore;  
' who mistrust nothing, will be  
' either asleep, or making merry in  
' public Houses. The Ship I intend  
' to burn is in the Port; is moor'd with  
' four Cables, and consequently will be  
' unable to get off. Besides, tho' she  
' were not altogether defenceless, we  
' yet ought to look upon her  
' Crew as nothing; since they were  
' impress'd so suddenly, and have been  
' so little us'd to the Sea.

' THERE is therefore no room to  
' doubt but I may easily succeed in my  
' Enterprize; especially as we are  
' not known; for we are not to sup-  
' pose, that we have been taken no-  
' tice of here, since there daily arrive  
' as large Ships as ours in these Har-  
' bours. Besides, supposing we had been  
' known; as we are to engage a set of  
' lazy, fearful Wretches; absolutely in-  
' capable of atchieving a brave Acti-  
' on; we should run no great risque in  
' attacking them, since they cou'd  
' never imagine we should be so bold,



1701.



‘ or fool-hardy, howsoever they might  
 ‘ be pleas’d to term it, to enter their  
 ‘ Port and burn a Ship, in sight of so  
 ‘ prodigious a number of Galeasses,  
 ‘ Gallies, Galiots and Brigantines, on  
 ‘ whose Succour they rely. If the Wea-  
 ‘ ther does but continue fair, I’m al-  
 ‘ most sure of succeeding; besides,  
 ‘ says I, this Vessel has done the E-  
 ‘ nemy too great Service; she must be  
 ‘ destroy’d for the honour of the Na-  
 ‘ tion.

The *Sieur*  
*Deschiens*  
 desires to  
 Command  
 in the En-  
 terprize.

THE *Sieur Deschiens*, who was a  
 Man of Resolution and true Courage,  
 approv’d all my Reasons, and only  
 said, that since I was resolv’d to make  
 the Attempt, he desir’d that I wou’d  
 at least give him the Command of it;  
 that he was the proper Person; I be-  
 ing very sensible that the Commander  
 is not to hazard himself, but in case  
 of Extremity. ‘ I never doubted your  
 ‘ Bravery, said I; but then I’ve too  
 ‘ much at Heart, the Success of the  
 ‘ Project I’ve now communicated to  
 ‘ you, to depend upon any Person but  
 ‘ my self.

His Rea-  
 sons a-  
 gainst it.

‘ BESIDES, in case I give you the  
 ‘ Command, and you should happen  
 ‘ to be unsuccessful, I might justly  
 ‘ blame my self, in case any Dis-  
 ‘ aster should befall to you, which  
 ‘ may very possibly happen; I should  
 be

' be blam'd for exposing you, and screen-  
' ing my self from Danger. Conse-  
' quently I had better go in Per-  
' son, and take the whole Event upon  
' my self.

' I N order to take all the Precauti-  
' ons necessary on such Occasions, and  
' not to run any Hazard; as I may  
' chance to be killed, here are the  
' Instructions I receiv'd from Court;  
' you need only conform to them. Say-  
ing this, I told him in what manner  
he shou'd behave.

' I have demanded, says I, of the  
' Viceroy of *Naples*, and have also  
' got Cardinal *de Fanson* to request  
' twelve hundred Soldiers, and four  
' Gallies, all which I now expect.  
' My Orders, in procuring this Suc-  
' cour, were to fall upon and destroy  
' the Emperor's Harbours; for I have  
' long since observ'd, that they were  
' poorly furnished, and in no Condi-  
' tion to make a Defence. When  
' you have received this Reinforce-  
' ment, you may then do as you  
' think proper; to go upon the Plan,  
' in case you find it reasonable, o-  
' therwise, you may employ these  
' Troops in what manner soever you  
' may think most serviceable to the  
' King's Interest. In the mean time,  
' stay

1701. ' stay on Board my Ship, till you hear  
 ' farther.'

He gives  
 Orders for  
 the Attack,  
 and goes  
 only with  
 fifty Men in  
 three Boats.

HAVING spoke to him in this manner, I put out my two Long-Boats and the Ship-Boat; and chusing the stoutest Fellows of the Crew, I ordered them all to put white Cockades in their Hats; to the end we might be able to distinguish one another, when we shou'd be on Board the *English* Ship. I afterwards dispos'd the Attack; appointing each Man his Duty, when we should come to Board the Enemy. Every thing being settled, we embark'd, with only fifty Men in my three little Vessels; but then they were all very brave and resolute.

They enter  
 the Har-  
 bour; meet two  
 Men a Fish-  
 ing, and  
 pretend to  
 belong to  
 the *English*.

THE Sea was smooth as Glass, the Air clear, and the Moon at the Full, when we entred the Harbour at Midnight. The first thing we saw, was a small Boat with two Men a fishing. In order to conceal my self, I pretended we were part of the *English* Crew; and enquir'd after their Ship in *Italian*; adding, the better to deceive them, that we had been taken and stript by the *French*. At the word *French*, they both cried out; *What a Dog the Chevalier Forbin is!* after this Exclamation, they answer'd, that the  
 Ship

Ship  
 forwa

IN  
 hund  
 were  
 I not  
 a Mu  
 fright  
 ed ba  
 but I  
 thing  
 they  
 taking  
 So  
 the Fi  
*Englis*  
 point  
 That'

TH  
 board  
 Prison  
 this C  
 the S  
 on bo  
 in, pu  
 upon  
 him h  
 the ri  
 had p  
 mme  
 pos'd  
 all he  
 me th



1701.

Ship lay farther up, and bid us advance forward.

IN our way, I saw upwards of an hundred and fifty little Vessels, that were coming out of the Harbour. Had I not known *Venice* perfectly well, such a Multitude of Vessels would have frightened me, and I should have returned back without making any Attempt; but I was very sensible, that I had nothing to fear from thence; and indeed they continued their Course without taking the least Notice of me.

He meets upwards of an hundred and fifty Vessels, and passes them

SOME time after, I met another little Fisher-boat, and enquiring after the *English* Ship, the Man on board her, pointing to a great Vessel, cry'd out, *That's She.*

Meets another Fisher-Boat.

THE Sailor whom I had taken on board the *Venetian* Vessel, and kept Prisoner purely to make use of him on this Occasion, had assur'd me he knew the Ship, having been more than once on board her. I had taken this Man in, purposely that he might serve me upon this Occasion, and had promis'd him his Liberty in case he shew'd me the right Ship; but on the other side, had positively assur'd him he should be immediately tuck'd up, in case he impos'd upon me. He then confirm'd all he had before said to me; and assur'd me that it was impossible for him to be mistaken,

A Sailor shews him the *English* Ship.

1701. mistaken, and knew the said Ship, by a great golden Lion that was behind the Stern.

He rows up  
to her.

SHE being thus known, tho' she lay at some Distance, I advanc'd in good Order, that we might all begin the Attack at the same time, and on the same Side. We advanc'd, when my Pilot spy'd (the Moon shining bright) the little Fisher-boat we had met before. He gave me Notice of it, and bid me observe that he row'd towards the *English* Ship; which made me apprehensive, that he knew me, and was going to give the *Englishman* Advice of it. In order to prevent him, I made my Crew ply their Oars; but notwithstanding they row'd with all their Strength, we yet could not prevent his Speaking.

He boards  
the Ship  
with only  
the Crew of  
his own Boat

As I had got before, being a Musket Shot from my two other Boats which follow'd me, I would not stay for their coming up, but directing my self to the Crew, "My Lads (says I) let us board the Enemy; while we are keeping them employ'd, our Commodores, who are not far off, will be up with us."

They kill  
five or six  
Men.

WE were got almost close to the Ship, when the Watch cry'd out *Where's the Long-boat going?* I made no manner of Answer, but went up

who

1701.

when I saw that two of the Port-holes of the Gunner's Room were open; when putting in the chief Pilot, and two of his Comrades, they first gave the Alarm, and laid five or six Men, who were between sleeping and waking, dead at their Feet.



The Author leaps on Board with a Bayonet and Musket.

IMMEDIATELY I leap'd on Board with a Bayonet fix'd on the Muzzel of a Piece in my Hand, and cry'd out, Kill! Kill! My Soldiers went and posted themselves, as I had order'd them; and this done, I ran at the Head of some of my Men under the Castle, in order to make my self Master of the large Cabbin, where the Arms of the Ship are generally stor'd. Some unhappy Wretches hearing the Noise, running out, defenceless, and in their Shirts, were cut to Pieces.

He falls into the Scuttles, but receives no Harm.

As we were pursuing the rest of these ill-fated People, who called out for Quarter, I fell into the Scuttles behind the Main-Mast. My Gun and the Ladder kept me from falling any lower; but my Hat, Wig, and Pistol fell in. In this Condition, I was afraid lest my Soldiers should take me for an Enemy; whereupon I rais'd my Voice, and said; *Nothing's the Matter, my Boys; advance; I shall be with you immediately.*

My



1701.

Takes the  
great Cab-  
bin, and  
kills seven  
or eight  
Men more.

Theybesiege  
theCaptain,  
his twoSons  
&c. in the  
Council-  
Room, and  
force them  
to cry for  
Quarter.

My Men, being very intrepid, and having an astonishing Presence of Mind, advanc'd towards the great Cabin, whither I follow'd them a Moment after. They had forc'd it when I came up with them, and had kill'd seven or eight Men who made a Resistance. I then plac'd Sentries over the Hatches, to prevent those who were below from coming upon Deck.

THE Officer who was appointed to attack the Fore-Castle, had also seiz'd upon it; so that there now remain'd only the Captain of the Ship and two of his Sons, and his Son-in-Law, who shutting themselves up in the Council-Room, had barricaded it, and stood in a Posture of Defence. 'Twas of the highest Consequence to force it immediately, before any of the Vessels with which the Harbour was croud'd, could come to their Assistance. Whereupon, I ran immediately on that Side, followed by some Soldiers, and sending forthwith a Bombardier into my Boat, there to fetch a Hatchet, Granadoes, and lighted Match, which I had been so provident as to take on Board, I soon made a Hole in the Partition. Upon my throwing in Granadoes, the Captain surrendered, and call'd out for Quarter. 'Twas then my two other Ves-

fel  
my f  
twen  
sista  
Tr  
of th  
toon  
Cour  
Men.  
Tr  
Sailo  
betwe  
the F  
away  
I was  
No  
pleat  
Fire  
der'd  
and  
which  
for th  
that v  
after  
Hat a  
der'd  
Quar  
twent  
all wh  
the C  
As no  
set Fir  
time a  
fel

1701.

and  
Mind,  
bbin.  
nt af-  
came  
en on  
ce.  
ches.  
from  
pointe  
d affe  
w re  
Ship  
on-in  
up in  
ted it  
fence  
ce to  
ny o  
rbou  
ir Af  
medi  
som  
Bom  
etch  
ghte  
viden  
ade  
n m  
aptai  
Quar  
Ve  
fel

fels came up; but I had already made my self Master of the Ship, with only twenty Men, and without their Assistance.

THE Officer who commanded one of the Boats, told me, that a Musketoon which had been fir'd out of the Council-Room, had kill'd two of his Men, and wounded three others.

Two of his  
Men kill'd,

THESE were all I lost. Most of the Sailors of the *English* Crew, who were between Decks, threw themselves thro' the Port-holes into the Sea, and swam away; so that in less than half an Hour I was Master of the Ship.

The Enemy  
slip thro'  
the Port-  
Holes.

NOTHING remain'd now to compleat my Vengeance, but my setting Fire to her. For this purpose, I order'd the Chests to be broke to pieces, and with Shirts dipt in Brimstone, which I had brought along with me for that purpose, I prepar'd three Fires, that were laid in three different Places; after this, having order'd my Pistol, Hat and Wig to be look'd for, I order'd my Men to cry out below, that Quarter would be given; whereupon twenty seven Men came up immediately, all whom I put in the two Boats, with the Captain, his Sons, and Son-in-Law. As no body more appear'd, I my self set Fire to the Piles; and staid 'till such time as the Flame began to seize upon the

Seizes the  
Ship.  
He orders  
three Piles  
to be rais'd,  
and himself  
sets fire to  
the Ship,

1701. the main Part of the Ship, upon which I return'd on board the Boat.

The Flame gets to the Cannon, which fire of themselves.

The Powder blows up, and the whole Ship.

He returns safe on Board his own.

His Politeness to the English Captain, &c.

THE Vessel was all on fire in a Moment, and I had the Pleasure of seeing it burn as we row'd off. This Sight alarm'd the whole Harbour, and Light was seen every where. Nothing but Cries were heard in all the Vessels and Houses. A little after, the Fire having got within side the Ship, the Cannon being loaded with Ball, began to fire on all Sides, with a most dreadful bellowing; when, at last, the Flame seizing upon the Powder, and making that dreadful Heap fly, sprung such a terrible Mine in the Harbour, as is not to be describ'd.

I then return'd on Board, without having been pursu'd, and was receiv'd by my Sailors, who cry'd aloud, *God save the King!* The whole Crew were so much the more overjoy'd at my Return, as the dreadful Noise they heard in the Port, had made them afraid I was in Danger.

THE Prisoners having been put on Board my Ship, I affected to pay the Captain the utmost Civilities; and after having complain'd to him in a gentle manner, for speaking in so unhand-some a manner of me; I said, "Tho' " I've been assur'd you intended to treat " me ill, you shall not only be hand-  
" somely



1701.



"somely us'd by me, but I'll send you back upon your Parole of Honour to *Venice*, where you shall treat with the Emperor's Embassador about the Exchange of Prisoners; and in case you cannot come to any Conclusion, you shall return to me in two Months."

As soon as it was Day, I order'd the Captain to be set ashore; but he did not long reap the Benefit of my Civility, for he died a few Days after; but whether it were of Grief, or that he was poyson'd by the *Venetians*, as was reported, I cannot say.

The *English* Captain set on shore, and dies soon after,

In the mean time the whole City of *Venice* was alarm'd; the Magistrates assembled in their Night-Gowns and Slippers in the *Pregadi*. The Embassador of *France* in a Panic, and terrified at the Tumult and Noise, fortified himself in his Palace; but as for Cardinal *d'Estrées*, he triumph'd on this Occasion, and look'd upon this Scene, as an Expedition undertaken for his Satisfaction, and which at the same time fully reveng'd him for the Infincerity and Breach of Promise of the *Venetians*.

The Magistrates of *Venice* meet in their Night-Gowns and Slippers. The whole City alarm'd.

In the first Transports of his Joy, he wrote me a most complaisant Letter; but the Embassador wrote in a very different Style, and after having made

The Cardinal is charm'd with the Exploit; the *French* Embassador is vex'd,

1701. made me a thousand Reproaches, he did not scruple to tell me, that purely for my own Glory, I had expos'd him, and all the *French* in *Venice*, to be murder'd by the Populace.

He answers  
this Letter  
in very  
strong  
Terms.

THIS Letter gave me some Uneasiness; but I answer'd the Embassador, that he had an easy time of it in his Cabinet, where he was secure and unruffled; while I daily ventur'd my Life for the Glory and Reputation of the *French* Arms. That so far from expecting Reproaches from him, I had flatter'd my self that he would have been pleas'd with me, for mortifying a Republic, which so little regarded what it had so often and so solemnly promis'd; that I was heartily sorry he did not approve of my last Exploit, but that I judg'd it of so much Service to the King, and so much to the Honour of my Country, that in case the *English* Vessel was still existing, I should think my self oblig'd to use my utmost Endeavours to destroy her.

The Embas-  
sador begs a  
thousand  
Pardons,

THE next Day, the Embassador, being now no longer in a Panic, wrote me a Letter, in Terms quite different from the former; for he beg'd a thousand Pardons; highly applauded all I had done; and concluded with desiring me to forget his former.

BEFORE

1701.

BEFORE I landed the *English* Captain, I ask'd him how strong his Crew was; he answer'd me, it had consisted of three hundred and thirty Men; and that had I attack'd him the Day before, I perhaps should not have found twenty Men on Board; that I should not have found so many as I did, had he not commanded them to come on Board in order to be discharg'd; and that there were upwards of an hundred in the Ship when I came to burn her; that I should have found a greater Resistance, had he not been perswaded that I would not presume to attack him in a Harbour like that of *Venice*; and therefore imagined himself perfectly secure. An important Lesson for all military Men; which plainly shews they ought to be upon their Guard, in what Place soever they may be; and to take care that an Enemy does not surprize them, since they are liable to be attack'd every Moment; not to mention that an Antagonist is very glad to come upon them unawares.

Enquires of the *English* Captain the Number of his Crew,

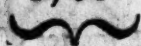
An excellent Maxim for all Military Men,

THE *Venetians*, exasperated at this bold Stroke, complain'd thereof to Cardinal d'*Estrées*. They declar'd to him, that they look'd upon it as a scandalous Act of Hostility, for which the Republic must have Satisfaction; that they plainly perceiv'd the *French* were resolved

The *Venetians* murmur highly at this bold Stroke, and threaten to be reveng'd,



1701.



to exasperate them to the highest Degree; but that they'd never submit to it, without shewing their Resentment upon this! Occasion; and how much they were offended, that the *French* should have presum'd to burn the Vessels of their Friends and Allies in their own Harbours, and under the very Eye of the Senate.

The Cardinal's Answer to the Republic.

THE Cardinal, overjoy'd that he could answer them in the same Terms they had writ to him, told them, that he was not a Soldier, and was ignorant of the Reasons which had occasion'd the Expedition they complain'd of; but that as I was in Sight, they might send on board my Ship as often as they pleas'd, in order to enquire into the Reasons of it; and that as for himself he had no other Satisfaction to make them.

The Senate depute a noble Venetian to him,

THE Senate, no ways satisfy'd with this Answer, sent a noble *Venetian*, accompanied with the *French* Consul, on board my Ship. I receiv'd the Deputy with the utmost Respect, and was not afraid of over-doing it, after what had pass'd; not to mention that I knew it would come to my Turn before the Conversation was ended.

To enquire into the Reasons of this Insult.

AFTER the first Compliments were over, he expos'd to me at Length, the chief Articles which the Senate complain'd

1701.

Deplain'd against; and declar'd, that the principal Subject of his coming, was, to ask the Reasons why I had so long us'd all my Endeavours to injure the Republic, which had done me no manner of Harm; that he was order'd to inquire into the Motives that had prompted me to infest all their Vessels which came in my way in the *Adriatic*, and to burn so many; and especially, to know why I had advanc'd so far in their Harbour, as *St. Mark*, and burnt a Ship belonging to their Allies, which was under the Protection of the Republic.

THIS Discourse open'd too great a field to me, not to have Materials to expatiate upon; when, after having heard all he had to say; "Sir, (says I) the King, my Master, sent me into the *Gulph*, in order that I might do him Service; but then, he had the Welfare of the Republic so much at Heart, and was so tender of it, that he forbid me to hoist any other Flag than that of the King of *Spain*, who is indisputably Sovereign of the Coasts of the Kingdom of *Naples*.

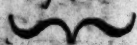
"MY Instructions, which are drawn up in the most sagacious Terms, allow me to attack none but the King's Enemies; and indeed I'm

"come

His Answer,

Substance  
of his In-  
structions,

1701.



Complains  
of the Mas-  
sacre of his  
Men, &c.

His Caution  
with Re-  
gard to the  
Senate.

Why he  
ought to  
have been

“ come only as into the Country of  
“ an Ally; imagining I had no Con-  
“ cerns with any but the *Imperialists*,  
“ in case they attempted any thing  
“ that might prejudice his Majesty’s  
“ Interests.

“ HOWEVER, I was scarce got into  
“ the *Gulph*, when one of my Cap-  
“ tains, and thirty of his Men, were  
“ assassinated as they were coming from  
“ Mass, in your Dominions, and in the  
“ midst of a Village, subject to the  
“ Republic. I complain’d thereof to  
“ your Magistrates; who, so far from  
“ making me the Satisfaction I re-  
“ quir’d, and which I might so justly  
“ expect, shut me out of all their  
“ Ports, and refus’d me so much a  
“ Water; at the same time that our  
“ Enemies received Succours of every  
“ kind.

“ Now had I, after this, made Re-  
“ quisals, no Body could have ju-  
“ room to complain of it; however  
“ I did not do it, notwithstanding the  
“ Irregularity of this Treatment, be-  
“ ing resolv’d to attack the *Imperialists*  
“ only; and therefore entreated the  
“ Senate to give Passes to all their own  
“ Subjects, for fear of confounding  
“ them with the Enemy.

“ ’T WAS so much the more rea-  
“ sonable to give me Satisfaction of  
“ thi

“ thi  
“ cep  
“ ly  
“ ing  
“ the  
“ any  
“ we  
“ the  
“ dai  
“ to  
“ Re  
“ “  
“ wo  
“ upo  
“ Ren  
“ one  
“ but  
“ both  
“ tian  
“ do  
“ you  
“ such  
“ servi  
“ trem  
“ gave  
“ sider  
“ of y  
“ with  
“ to fir  
“ they  
“ neve  
“ relea  
“ Vol.



1701.

better  
treated by  
the Vene-  
tians.

How tender  
he was of  
their Ship-  
ping.

this head, that as I was to inter-  
 cept the Succours which were day-  
 ly sent to Prince *Eugene*; and it be-  
 ing impossible for me to distinguish  
 the *Venetians* from the *Imperialists*,  
 any other way than by Passes; it  
 were impossible to refuse indulging  
 them these, without exposing me  
 daily to Mistakes, equally obnoxious  
 to the King my Master, and to the  
 Republic.  
 'Tis notorious that the Senate  
 would never listen to any thing  
 upon this Head, and that all my  
 Remonstrances were fruitless;  
 one would then have thought it  
 but just for me to take Reprisals  
 both on the Enemy and the *Vene-*  
*tians*; nevertheless, in order not to  
 do any thing that might offend  
 you, I would not exert myself in  
 such a Manner as your Conduct de-  
 serv'd; and being resolv'd to be ex-  
 tremely tender of the *Venetians*, I  
 gave myself the Trouble for a con-  
 siderable Time, to convoy such  
 of your Vessels, as I met loaded  
 with Ammunition and Provisions,  
 to such Cities in their Dominions, as  
 they said they were bound to; and  
 never made the least Difficulty to  
 release them, when your Podestates

VOL. II.

F

" assur'd

1701.

Conni-  
vance of  
the Podes-  
tats,

How he let  
82 Vessels  
pass.

He remon-  
strates a-  
bout the

“ assur’d me, the Cargoes belong’d to  
“ the *Venetians*.

“ THE Republic is so much the  
“ more oblig’d to me on this Head,  
“ as I was very sensible the Magistrate  
“ impos’d upon me; since I was always  
“ inform’d a Day or two after, that  
“ the Vessels I had releas’d were gone  
“ to the Enemy. I have met with  
“ some who deceiv’d me in that man-  
“ ner; but after having manifestly  
“ found them in a Lye, and seen thro’  
“ the Connivance of the Magistrate  
“ one would then have concluded  
“ that I ought in justice to have set  
“ fire to them; however, I content-  
“ ed myself with throwing their Am-  
“ munition and Provisions into the  
“ Sea, and dismiss’d the Vessels and  
“ the Crew unmolested.

“ AT one time, I met near four  
“ score and two Vessels that were  
“ sailing to *Trieste*; but let them pass  
“ tho’ I might easily have stop’d them  
“ and knew very well, that they  
“ were going only to take on Board  
“ the Provisions, &c. design’d for  
“ Prince *Eugene’s* Army; for I had  
“ receiv’d Notice, they had been sent  
“ merely upon that Account.

“ BUT here follows the strong  
“ Circumstance of all. Whilst I was

“ bloc

1701.

*English*  
Man of  
War,

“ blocking up *Trieste*, the Emperor's  
 “ Ambassador equips in your Har-  
 “ bour, and under the Eye of the  
 “ Senate, the *English* Ship, about  
 “ which you're now chiefly come to  
 “ complain. You are not ignorant,  
 “ that the King's Ministers have re-  
 “ presented to your Magistrates, that  
 “ it was their Duty to put a Stop to  
 “ this Equipment. Upon the Remon-  
 “ strances which were made to them,  
 “ the Senate gave their Parole of Ho-  
 “ nour, that the *English* Ship should  
 “ not be equipp'd; and promis'd both  
 “ the King and his Ministers, that  
 “ provided I was commanded to leave  
 “ the *Gulph*, they would undertake to  
 “ prevent the *Imperialists* for the fu-  
 “ ture, from succouring Prince *Eu-*  
 “ *gene*.

“ ON these specious Promises, the  
 “ King and his Ministers sent me Or-  
 “ ders to sail away. I obey'd; but  
 “ what was the Consequence of it?  
 “ Scarce was I gone, but the *English*  
 “ Man of War hoisted the *Imperial*  
 “ Flag; and after having saluted your  
 “ Admiral, who return'd it, she goes  
 “ out of the Port, sails for *Trieste*,  
 “ convoys upwards of an hundred  
 “ Vessels, all which I had suffer'd to  
 “ pass by me, and carry'd them to  
 “ the Mouth of the *Po*, laden with

Their Sin-  
 cerity with  
 regard to  
 the *English*  
 Ship,



1701.

The little  
Satisfaction  
the Venetians  
made.

“ the Succours which I had block’d  
“ up so long.

“ THE King’s Ministers made fresh  
“ Complaints upon that Head to the  
“ Senate, of their Breach of Pro-  
“ mise; but all the Satisfaction they  
“ obtain’d, was this cold Answer,  
*We are very sorry this happen’d; but*  
*we could not prevent the Emperor’s Em-*  
*bassador from making this Armament.*

“ SINCE that Time, I have burnt,  
“ you say, a very great Number of  
“ Venetian Vessels; that may be, and I  
“ dare not assert the contrary; but a  
“ Circumstance which is certain, is,  
“ that had they had Passes, which the  
“ Senate were more than once desir’d to  
“ indulge them with, I should have suf-  
“ fer’d them to pass in the same man-  
“ ner as I did several other Vessels  
“ richly laden from the Levant, and  
“ which I knew were the Republic’s  
“ by their Passes.

“ BUT tho’ I had really burnt any  
“ Venetian Ships, when I found them  
“ succouring the Enemy, contrary to  
“ the Intentions of the Senate, would  
“ there be any room to be so exasper-  
“ rated against me? What in fact  
“ would have been done on that Oc-  
“ casion? Only that I should have pu-  
“ nish’d a Set of Smuglers, false Bre-  
“ thren, and bad Subjects? And with  
“ regard

1701.

" regard to the *English* Ship which I  
 " just now fir'd in your Harbour;  
 " give me leave to tell you, the Re-  
 " public ought to thank, and not re-  
 " proach me for it; since I only punish'd  
 " an insolent Creature, who lorded it  
 " over you, in *Spight of your Teeth*."  
 This Answer of mine quite disconcert-  
 ed the *Venetian*, who said no more,  
 but took his Leave; and directing him-  
 self to the *French* Consul, Sir, says  
 he, he has answer'd like a *Forbin*. I  
 cannot say, whether by this Expressi-  
 on, in alluding to my Name, he hint-  
 ed to any thing but what the Words  
 naturally present.

THAT very Day I writ to Court,  
 in order to give the Minister Advice  
 of my last Expedition, and receiv'd  
 the following Answer. " His Maje-  
 " sty seems very well satisfied, Sir,  
 " with your Success in taking so ma-  
 " ny Vessels; the Action you have  
 " perform'd, in burning in the Har-  
 " bour of *Malamoco*, the *English* Man  
 " of War, design'd for the Empe-  
 " ror's Service, is also highly satisfa-  
 " ctory to him. His Majesty was  
 " thoroughly sensible of the Difficul-  
 " ty of the Enterprize, and the Dan-  
 " ger to which you must have ex-  
 " pos'd your self. He therefore com-  
 " mands me to assure you, that he will

the King  
 highly ap-  
 plauds his  
 Conduct.

1701.



“ not forget your Officers, and others  
 “ whom you shall recommend ; and  
 “ with whose Conduct you are satis-  
 “ fied, and that you yourself shall be  
 “ highly so, with the Regard which  
 “ will be shewn you.”

Writes to  
 Cardinal de  
*Fanson* ; his  
 kind An-  
 swer,

I had writ to *Rome* to Cardinal de  
*Fanson*, upon the same Subject ; who  
 sent word, that my Care in giving  
 him an Account of my Success, had  
 given him great Satisfaction ; and af-  
 terwards, expatiating on the Friend-  
 ship he had for me, he writ a thou-  
 sand Particulars, in such kind and  
 tender Terms, that I am oblig'd to  
 suppress them here.

He is now  
 Master of  
 the *Gulph*.

THE Expedition above-mention'd  
 made me Master of the *Gulph* ; I  
 therefore set sail, and continued to  
 cruize. A few Days after, an Adven-  
 ture happen'd to me which I must  
 not suppress, and which gave me  
 the more Pleasure, as it afforded me an  
 Opportunity of making his Majesty's  
 Arms formidable ; I thereby had am-  
 ple Satisfaction for all the Insults of the  
*Venetians*.

Meets a  
 small Vef-  
 sel, with  
 the Prove-  
 ditor-Ge-  
 neral of  
 the *Gulph*  
 on Board.

A small Vessel which I had sent be-  
 fore me upon Discoveries, whose Com-  
 mander I had order'd to make every  
 Vessel he met with send on Board  
 him, (for I now would not suffer one  
 Vessel to pass me unsearch'd) met  
 with

with  
 Gener  
 Magis  
 confid  
 then  
 his E  
 all the  
 T  
 up wi  
 on bo  
 The C  
 to hea  
 was t  
 Office  
 that h  
 vedito  
 board  
 TH  
 go an  
 mov'd  
 tily a  
 no M  
 tier F  
 Order  
 upon  
 ing m  
 obey'd  
 TH  
 gave  
 ings.  
 ty of  
 Person  
 strates



with a *Piotte*, having the *Proveditor* 1701.  
General of the *Gulph* on Board. This  
Magistrate, who is one of the most  
considerable in the Republic, being  
then exercising one of the Duties of  
his Employment, was cloath'd with  
all the Marks of his Dignity.

THE *French* Officer being come  
up with him, commanded him to go  
on board the *Chevalier Forbin's* Ship.  
The General, surpriz'd and scandaliz'd  
to hear such an Order given him, who  
was to command others; order'd the  
Officer to sail away, and told him,  
that his Excellency, my Lord the *Pro-*  
*veditor* General of the *Gulph*, was a-  
board that *Piotte*.

The *Prove-*  
*ditor* is  
shock'd.

His Answer,

THE *Frenchman*, resolv'd not to fore-  
go any of his Pretensions, and no ways  
mov'd with the pompous Title, haugh-  
tily answer'd, that he acknowledg'd  
no Man for General, but the *Cheva-*  
*lier Forbin*; that he had best obey the  
Orders, otherwise that he would fire  
upon his Vessel; but the *Venetian* hav-  
ing more Sense than to run the Risk,  
obey'd, and came aboard.

He is forc'd  
to come on  
Board.

THE Officer who had done all this,  
gave me Notice of his whole Proceed-  
ings. Overjoy'd to have an Opportuni-  
ty of mortifying the Republic in the  
Person of one of their chief Magi-  
strates, I gave proper Orders, and

The *Treas-*  
*ment* he  
meets with,

1701. withdrew into my Cabbin, in order to act the Farce I had contriv'd.

The General is oblig'd to attend.

THE Proveditor was scarce got on Board, when the Officer upon Guard bid him come up; which the *Venetian* made some scruple to do, making the Dignity with which he was invested, a Pretence, and therefore desir'd to speak with me. The Officer answer'd, pursuant to my Instructions, that his Excellency the Chevalier was just gone into his Cabbin, where he was gone to lie down a Moment; and that no one dar'd to wake him yet. He added, that he was very sorry for it; but that according to his Orders being oblig'd (without the least Exception) to search all such Vessels as should come on Board, after all their Crew was come in; he besought his Excellency, not to be displeas'd at his obeying the Orders which were given him.

The General goes humbly to the Chevalier's Cabbin.

THE General, who was a Man of good Sense, as most of the *Venetians* are, understood the Meaning of all this; and finding himself forc'd to go up, he complied at once. The Moment he was come in, the Officer who walk'd before him, stepping very gently upon tip-toes, came and scratch'd at my Cabbin, the Door of which he open'd a little; and speak-

ing

1701.

ing to me softly, as tho' he had been  
afraid to disturb me: " My Lord,  
" says he, I beg your Excellency ten  
" thousand Pardons, for presuming to  
" awake you; but his Excellency my  
" Lord the Provéditor General of the  
" *Gulph* ———

The Cheva-  
lier puts a  
*Gaçonade*  
on the Ge-  
neral.

AT the Words *Provéditor General*,  
I started up, and running to the Cab-  
bin-Door, receiv'd the *Venetian*, to  
whom I made a low Bow, and assur'd  
him, I was greatly sorry, my Offi-  
cers had forc'd him to come on Board,  
and to come up. I entreated him to  
believe, that how general soever my  
Order might have been given, I ne-  
ver design'd it should extend to his  
Excellency; that my Officers had ex-  
ceeded their Instructions, but that I  
conjur'd him to pardon them, and to  
ascribe their Mistake wholly to the  
Unhappiness of the Times, which  
forc'd them to it; and which daily  
forc'd me to do several Things I was  
heartily sorry for.

The Gene-  
ral allows  
the impossi-  
tion.

THE *Venetian* answer'd with great  
Gravity, that he was heartily glad this  
Accident had happen'd, as it gave  
him an Opportunity of being acquaint-  
ed with me. A Moment after, Caf-  
fee, Chocolate, Sweetmeats, and va-  
rious sorts of Wine were brought,  
and the General tasted of them all.

F 5

WE



1701.

The Chevalier complains against the Republic.

WE discours'd a considerable time on the Posture of Affairs, when I complain'd on the Partiality of the Republic; the ill Usage I daily met with at their Hands, and their refusing me Admittance into their Ports; and Refreshments, even so much as Water, at the same time they were indulg'd the Enemy.

The General recom-  
mended with  
great Civi-  
lity,

THE *Venetian*, who was no less artful than polite, in his Answer excus'd the Senate, but at the same time did not blame me. At his taking Leave, all my Soldiers were under Arms; when immediately I order'd the Drums to beat; and the Crew having shouted several times, *God save the King*, I saluted his Excellency with nine Guns. I sent a Relation of the Whole to Cardinal *d'Esfrées* and the Embassador; and the latter wrote word to me, that the General had applauded me to the Skies and that I had play'd upon him with the utmost Art.

The Chevalier complains against by Count de Toulouse.

'Twas about this Time, that the Count *de Toulouse* complain'd against me for granting Passes to the *French* Pilot to whom I had sold, at *Brindisi*, the two Barks which lay at *Ancona*. These two Vessels, which were sailing for *France*, enter'd *Messina*, when the Pilot presented his Pass. Immediately 'twas carried to the Admiral, who

it w  
fum  
him  
had  
foun  
that  
this  
the  
wrot  
myse  
T  
and  
whic  
due  
not  
ces  
lig'd  
point  
cer  
given  
at Se  
there  
Envy  
a Me  
A  
Vesse  
Com  
At 1  
them  
Card  
ny,  
his P  
Dupo

1701.



it was represented to him, that I assum'd an Authority which was due to him only. But the Prince, to whom I had the Honour of being known, soon found out the Truth, and perceiv'd that the sole Motive of my acting in this manner, was in order to facilitate the Sale of these Vessels; however he wrote to me, and order'd me to justify myself.

THIS was very easy for me to do; and my Reasons tallying with those which he himself first started, he had due Regard to them. This Affair was not attended with any ill Consequences; however, I thought myself oblig'd to mention it, were it only to point out the Caution which an Officer ought to use; for nothing is forgiven that is transacted in the Field or at Sea, especially in certain Cases; and there are always Persons, who, out of Envy, or to make their Court, make a Merit of accusing you.

The Court  
satisfied  
with him.

A Maxim  
for Officers.

As I continued to burn all such Vessels as I found without Passes, the Complaints and Murmurs continued. At last, the *Venetians*, weary to see themselves thus handled, address'd the Cardinal again, and made him so many, and such glaring Promises, that his Eminence was still so much their Dupe, as to be over-persuaded by them.

The Cardinal again  
orders him  
not to molest the  
*Venetians*.

1701. them. Accordingly he sent me Orders not to molest the *Venetians*; and to leave Things upon the same Foot on which they had stood, at my coming into the *Gulph*. Having therefore now no farther Business with cruising, I resum'd the Project before taken Notice of, which I had suspended, only because I had an Opportunity of performing a better Exploit.

Resumes  
his Design  
of bomb-  
barding the  
Forts upon  
the Coast.

I have already taken Notice more than once, that at my first coming into the *Gulph*, I observ'd that most of the Emperor's Harbours were unprovided with Forces, and poorly fortified. My Design was to bombard and destroy those Forts which stood on the Coast, and for that purpose I had demanded of the Vice-Roy of *Naples*, twelve hundred Soldiers, and four Gallies. This Succour was not yet arriv'd; and tho' it was impossible for me to execute my Design, with so few Men as I then had, yet I was sensible I might do something, while the Re-inforcement was coming.

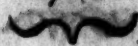
Resolves to  
bombard  
*Trieſte*.

I resolv'd to begin my Expedition by bombarding *Trieſte*. I immediately turn'd into Bomb-Gallies, two Vessels I had taken from the Enemy, and went and cast Anchor there, within Canon-shot. I was scarce arriv'd, but, in order not to lose time, I went a-

long



1701.



long with Mr. Deschiens, to sound under the very Walls of the City, in order to take a View of the Places, and to consider in what manner I should dispose the Attack.

Tho' the Cannon and Musket-shot came pouring upon us like Hail, for there appear'd upwards of six thousand Men upon the Ramparts, yet I had not so much as one Man kill'd or wounded. Having fix'd upon a Place for my Mortar-Pieces, I brought them forward in the Night, and began by firing into the City six Volleys of Cannon, charg'd with eighteen Pounders. Our Discharge was so successful, that we shatter'd a great many Houses, and one of the Balls carried off one of the Candlesticks that stood on the Governor's Table, who was at Supper.

He bombards Trieste; and a Ball carried off a Candlestick from the Governor's Table,

My Mortar-Pieces now begun to play, each whereof carried four Bombs, which made dreadful Havock. As I had taken Care to put combustible Matter into the Bombs, several Parts of the City were immediately on fire, insomuch that it appear'd all in a Flame. The whole City was instantly alarm'd, and the Terror was so great, that all the Inhabitants fled into the Fields, and had not time to carry away any thing of Value.

All the City in a Flame.

The Inhabitants fly into the Fields.

THERE

1701.

 THERE stood on the Mole, which forms a kind of little Bridge, a Battery mounted with fourteen Pieces of Cannon. This was the only Post that could do me any considerable Harm. In order to get the Start of the Enemy, (for I did not doubt but they would attack me on that Side) I made two floating Half-Moons of my Ship-boat and Long-boat. I cover'd them with Mattresses, and fill'd these two little Vessels with Fusiliers, and going on board one of them, I went on that Side.

He is desirous of landing with forty Men.

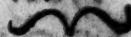
DRAWING near to it, I saw the Post was abandon'd, and the whole City. To make Advantage of the Terror which had seiz'd the Enemy, I was desirous of landing forty Soldiers and to attempt to enter the Place, in order to burn it quite; I went and conferr'd on this Head with Mr. Deschamps, who was employ'd in the Bombardment.

Mr. Deschamps diverts him from his Design.

HE diverted me from my Design by telling me we had no Petard to force the Gate which lay opposite to the Mole. " Besides, says he, you saw a little while ago, how many Enemies appear'd upon the Ramparts, and you have but forty Soldiers to oppose them with; so that if unhappily the Troops, recover

" from

" from their first Terror, should come 1701.

" upon you; they would oppress you 

" with Numbers, and certainly be

" your Destruction. Take my Ad-

" vice; be satisfied. We bombard

" here, without any Molestation; the

" whole City is in a Flame, what can

" you desire more?

I suffer'd myself to be over-per-

suaded by these Reasons, and there-

fore did not do any thing to the Pur-

pose; for had I follow'd my own No-

tion, I should have quite destroy'd the

City; for I was inform'd next Day by

the *Venetians*, that all the Inhabitants

had left the City; and that the Mili-

tia they had rais'd on a sudden to de-

fend them, taking Advantage of the

Terror the Citizens were under, had

first plunder'd the City, and then ta-

ken to their Heels.

AFTER this Expedition, I put out

my Long-boat, and sent her to *Venice*

with Letters. She was mounted with

four Peteraroes, two before and two

behind, with only fifteen Soldiers on

board, commanded by the *Sieur Pei-*

*nier*, Ensign of Marines.

SINCE my burning the *English* Ship,

the *Venetians* had shut up the En-

trance of their Ports with Men of

War and Gallies. The Moment my

Long-boat appear'd at the Entrance

of

Which  
ruins it en-  
tirely.

The Militia  
all run  
away.

Sends his  
Long-boat  
to Venice.

It is stop-  
ped by the *Ve-*  
*netian* Gal-  
lies.



1701. of the *Lido*, the Gallies stopt it, and ask'd the Officer whither he was going, who answer'd, he carried Letters from the Chevalier *Forbin* to the French Embassador.

The Senate  
frighted at  
his Long-  
boat, which  
they mis-  
take for an  
Admiral,

I cannot say how all this was manag'd; but whether it were that the Officer did not express himself properly, or that my Name had struck them with Terror; they dispatch'd a Vessel to give the Senate Notice of my Arrival at the *Chain*, in a Frigate of fourteen Guns, with two hundred Men on Board. They were in such a Pannic that they made their Sailors run up to the Ends of their Sail-Yards, in order to count the Men who were a-board the Long-boat, which they took for an Admiral.

They send  
to Cardinal  
*d'Estrees*.

THE Senate terrified at the News which was brought them, deputed immediately one of their Nobles, to complain thereof to Cardinal *d'Estrees* to whom he represented, that 'twas plain, the French were resolv'd to carry their Insults to the utmost; and that the Chevalier *Forbin* must certainly have come upon some important Design, which had been concerted with the King's Ministers.

The French  
Embassador  
comes on  
board my  
Long-boat.

THE Cardinal in order to give the Senate Satisfaction, engag'd the Embassador himself to go on Board, in order

order  
comm  
He c  
prize  
Long  
board  
Sailor  
those  
Court  
back,  
Fear,  
throw  
bleed  
bread  
Name  
the us  
ains a  
nente  
comm  
was, I  
Cavagl  
ens p  
nd the  
For  
t Trie  
ots w  
he Co  
ines  
ent m  
he tw  
letter

\* Bollin  
Sailor  
com.

order to enquire into the Affair, and command me to sail away immediately.

1701.

He came indeed, and was vastly surprized to see at his Arrival only a Long-boat, with thirty Men on board, computing both Soldiers and Sailors; and taking his own Letters, those which were directed to the Court, and to the Cardinal, he return'd back, laughing heartily at the panic Fear, which my Long-boat only had thrown the *Venetians* into.

'Tis indeed certain, that I was so much dreaded in that Country, that my very Name was become proverbial; and the usual Wish, with which the Captains at their going to Sea complimented one another, after having recommended themselves to S. Mark, was, *Iddio ci guardi della Bollina, e del Cavaglier di Forbino*; That is, Heaven preserve us from the \* *Bollina*, and the Chevalier *Forbin*.

Four Days after my Expedition at *Trieste*, I was joyn'd by two Gallies with Oars, which I demanded of the Court; and also by two Brigantines which the Viceroy of *Naples* sent me. 'Twas by the Arrival of the two last Vessels, that I receiv'd a letter from Cardinal *de Janson*, by

His very Name formidable.

He is join'd by two Gallies, and as many Brigantines.

\* *Bollina* is a kind of Meteor, which is look'd upon by Sailors, as a certain Indication of an impending storm.

1701.



The Grand  
Vicar of  
*Brindisi*  
complains  
of his hav-  
ing forc'd  
away a  
Nun.  
Cardinal *de*  
*Jansen* ju-  
stifies him  
to the Pope.

He justifies  
himself by  
the Bishop  
of *Brindisi*.

which he inform'd me, that the Grand-  
Vicar of *Brindisi* had complain'd in  
the strongest Terms to the Pope, con-  
cerning the Outrages, as he said, I  
had committed in that City; that he  
complain'd in particular, that I had,  
with Sword in Hand, forc'd a-  
way a Nun out of his Convent; and  
that I had kept her several Days, and  
had not dismiss'd her, till after I had  
abus'd her in a most vile manner.

IN the same Letter, he wrote me  
word, that he had Apologiz'd for me  
to the utmost of his Power; that he  
had entreated his Holiness to suspend  
his Judgment, till he had wrote to me  
and heard from my self, how matters  
stood; that he never knew me guilty  
of such Extravagancies; and was al-  
sur'd I cou'd invalidate the Crimes  
which were laid to my Charge.

I answer'd his Eminence, and there-  
plainly told him what had occasion'd  
the Complaint which had been made  
and desir'd him to beseech his Hol-  
iness, to enquire about it of the Bi-  
shop of *Brindisi*, who, I said, wou'd  
certainly clear me of any Crimes that  
might be laid to my Charge.

THE Pope judging this to be the  
most proper method of knowing the  
Truth, ordered a Letter to be writte  
to the Bishop, who answer'd it, and  
therein fully prov'd my Innocence

He ev  
deserv  
beauti  
taken  
IN  
Co  
Minist  
ome T  
ng me  
Majest  
ship, i  
ust,  
we i  
at th  
ainst  
ken o  
uded,  
Castle  
n. the  
ouse f  
my i  
THE  
himself  
unde  
tion v  
ore th  
mpt t  
meet  
ging  
Bom  
nor at  
hence  
etach'd  
view



He even did me more Honour than I deserv'd, and set my Character in so beautiful a Light, that one wou'd have taken me for a Saint.

IN answer to the Letters I had sent to Court, I receiv'd some from the Minister, written in the most handsome Terms, and highly complimenting me on the Services I had done his Majesty. *His Majesty*, says his Lordship, *is very well satisfied with your Conduct, and the Vigour with which you have infested the Enemy.* He added, that the *Venetians* still complained against me, but that little notice was taken of all their Clamour; and concluded, with desiring me to set fire to Castle, call'd *la Mezzola*, situated in the *Po*, which serv'd as a Store-house for the Succours of the Imperial Army in *Italy*.

THE Terms in which he express'd himself on the last Article, gave me to understand, that he had the Expectation very much at Heart. This was more than enough to excite me to attempt this Enterprize; and overjoy'd to meet with an Opportunity of obliging the Minister, I discontinued the Bombard, and went and cast Anchor at the Mouth of the River, whence having discover'd the Castle, I detach'd the *Sieur Deschiens*, in order to view it, and see whether the Pro-

Is thanked for his Services from Court.

Is desir'd to set fire to a Castle.

Accepts the Commission with pleasure,

Sends out to view the Castle.

1701. jest of the Court were feasible or not.

**T**HERE was no coming to the Place without passing thro' a part of the Pope's Dominions. The *Sieur Deschamps* found, at his coming into the River, a body of Troops belonging to his Holiness. The Soldiers, the moment they spy'd the Gallies, were afraid and run from their Posts. Mr. *Deschamps* supposing the Guard-room belong'd to the Enemy, plunder'd it; burnt some Boats he met with upon the Shore, and advanc'd in order to take a View of the Castle.

Description of it.

Is told 'tis not feasible.

His Men plunder some of the Pope's Guards, thro' Mistake, and burn their Vessels,

**T**HIS Fort was flank'd with four Towers, surrounded with a Moat which was fill'd by a Stream, with a Draw-bridge; and defended by a Garrison capable of holding out a long Siege. He return'd to acquaint me with what he had done, and seen. Upon his Report, judging it wou'd not be possible to execute what the Minister desir'd, I was forc'd to bend my Views another way, which was a great Mortification to me; being very sensible, that the Court would be highly disoblig'd that a Project they had started should remain unexecuted.

I return'd therefore to Bombarde and whilst I was preparing to go and attack *Fiume*, which I was resolv'd to shatter in the same manner I had done *Trieste*; I was told, that the Gua-

whom  
long'd  
which  
News  
Cardi  
a the  
hence  
enting  
is Hol  
To  
a Car  
hande  
which  
letters  
ake m  
ced th  
sion'd  
asonab  
ad got  
ce stre  
lf and  
ardina  
rs; an  
oldiers  
me Bl  
A F T  
tended  
ain f  
ume,  
sk. T  
iddle c  
gan to  
v'd, f  
ich it

1701.

whom my Men had plunder'd, be-  
long'd to his Holiness, as also the Barks  
which had been burnt. This piece of  
News made me justly fear, that the  
Cardinal Legat of *Ferrara*, who was  
in the Emperor's Interests, shou'd  
hence take an opportunity of repre-  
senting me in the most odious light to  
his Holiness, and making him my Enemy.  
To ward off this Blow, I wrote  
to Cardinal *de Janson*, and the Com-  
mander of a small Fort, hard by,  
which belong'd to the Pope. In those  
letters, I begg'd Pardon for the Mi-  
take my Officer had made, which in-  
deed the Guards themselves had oc-  
casion'd. My Letters arriv'd very  
seasonably; for Cardinal *de Ferrara*  
had got the start, and complain'd in  
the strongest terms both against my-  
self and the whole Nation; however,  
Cardinal *de Janson* made up all Mat-  
ters; and I got off, by giving the  
soldiers only a few Straw-beds, and  
some Blankets that had been burnt.  
AFTER this Affair, which was not  
attended with worse Consequences, I  
again set sail, and went towards  
*Genoa*, where I arriv'd a little after  
dark. This Place is situated in the  
middle of a spacious Bay. Before I  
began to form my Attack, I was re-  
volv'd, for several substantial Reasons  
which it wou'd be too long to enu-

He begs  
Pardon for  
it by Let-  
ter.

Gets off  
easily.

Goes to  
Bombard  
*Genoa*.



1701.  merate, to make my self Master of little Town call'd *Lourano*, which was wall'd in, and lay at about two League distance from the City.

Goes to  
*Lourano*, a  
Town just  
by *Fiume*.

I imagin'd that it would be so much the easier to surprize it, since, in all probability, the Enemy did not think me so near them. The Night, which now came on apace, favour'd my Enterprize; when I took my four Vessels with Oars, the Ship-boats, and a Mortar-piece, and went towards *Lourano*.

The Imperialists have notice of his Arrival, and are in a posture of Defence.

THE *Venetians*, who are vast vigilant, and never lost sight of me, having discover'd me, I know how, gave immediate Notice of my coming to the *Imperialists*, by lighting several Fires at proper distances. At the Signal, the latter took up Arms, shut all their Gates which lay towards the Fields; and appear'd upon the Ramparts in such Crouds, as plainly proved they were in a Condition to defend themselves, in case I attacked them.

He throws  
several  
Bombs.  
The Women and  
Children  
run out of  
the Town.

FINDING my Project thus blown, I wou'd not engage in a Fight, in the night-time, without knowing exactly the Force I had to oppose; but in the mean time throw'd a few Bombs, which gave the Alarm, and it soon became general; for we cou'd see Lights running up and down the Fields; which the Women and Children held in their Hands, who had been sent out of the

of Town, and were running away as fast as their Heels cou'd carry them. 1701.

At Day-light I perceiv'd a considerable number of Men under Arms, posted on the Shore in order to hinder a Descent. Before I made any Attempt, I was desirous of knowing what sort of Troops they were; and whether I was to make Head against Citizens or Soldiers. For this purpose, I went on Board a *Piotte*, and went directly towards them; and being come to a proper distance, I coasted along the Shore for some time, in order to find out a Place where I might most easily land.

The Croud on shore followed me in a straggling manner, firing a great number of Volleys of Musket-shot upon me, by which I soon found what sort of Warriors they were. These Citizens trembled as they fir'd, and did it so awkwardly, that they did not wound so much as one Man. A Circumstance which surprized me on this occasion, was, the Resolution of my Sailors, who stood immoveable upon their Legs all the time, and fac'd these Volleys which flew like Hail, without once flinching, and with a Calm that would do honour to the most intrepid.

HAVING found a Place proper for a Descent, I return'd towards my

The Shore  
crouded  
with Men  
under  
Arms.

He goes to  
view them;

The Citi-  
zens upon  
the Shore  
fire very  
awkwardly;

Intrepidity  
of his Sai-  
lors,

Endeavours  
to make a  
Descent.

1701. Vessels, which I drew up in a Line of Battle, and advanc'd in order to attack these Troops, who were upwards of four hundred. They fir'd upon my little Fleet, but did me very little harm. Being advanc'd

Kills 40 of the Enemy.

He Lands 40 Men.

They take the Town.

Demands Contribution.

They begin to plunder the Town.

within half the length of a Musket shot, I fir'd my Cannon, Patareroes and Muskets upon this military Populace, and killing thirty of them, the rest were frighted and took to their Heels.

No one opposing my Descent, I landed fourscore Soldiers, and ordered the Officer who commanded them, to attack a Gate which stood toward the Fields; during which my Brigantines and Galliots should attack the Gate that stood towards the Sea. We both entred much about the same time, by the respective Gates we had attack'd, and made our selves Masters of the Town.

My first Care was to set a Guard in all Places where I judg'd necessary in order to prevent a Surprise; after which I threaten'd to fire the Town in case they did not immediately give me a large Contribution. Whilst the Inhabitants were consulting Methods to save their Town from the Flames; the Sailors who were got in began to plunder, and the Soldiers that were equally greedy of Prey, let

their  
In an  
utmo  
ther t  
to sto  
IN

the E  
to a F  
a Lea  
and a  
from  
now t  
Honou  
erpriz  
succe  
was no  
set fi  
Town.  
Gale t  
es, wh  
he Flan  
he wh  
THE  
which h  
of the  
d, whi  
order  
the Fir  
g in, I  
the T  
Host  
which  
id; be  
VOL.



their Posts, and began to plunder also. 1701.

In an instant every thing was in the utmost Confusion, insomuch that neither the Officers nor my self were able to stop them.

Every thing  
in Confu-  
sion,

IN this Disorder, I was afraid lest the Enemy, who were now retreated to a Place not above half a Quarter of a League from the City, should come and attack me, assisted by Succours from the City of *Fiume*. I therefore now thought only of retiring with Honour, and of compleating my Enterprize which had hitherto been so successful. To end the whole, (for I was not now to expect a Contribution) I set fire to almost every part of the Town. The Fire, assisted by a gentle Gale that blew, soon catch'd the Houses, which were most of Timber; and the Flame flying from one to the other, the whole was in a Blaze.

Is oblig'd to  
retire, and  
burns the  
Town.

THE Flames catch'd the Church, which had been plunder'd, as was the rest of the Town, the Tabernacle excepted, which remain'd untouch'd. I ran in order to carry off the *Host*, before the Fire seiz'd the Altar. At my going in, I found a Sailor who had opened the Tabernacle, and seeing the *Host* in the *Pyx*, and the *Ciborium*, which several other little *Hosts* were hid; being struck with Horror, he fell

The Church  
on Fire.  
A Sailor  
layshold of  
the Taber-  
nacle and  
Hosts,

1701. on his Knees, and clasping his Hands, cry'd out, *My God! I ask your Pardon; I did not think you were there.* At these Words, looking back, and seeing me behind him, and dreading undoubtedly that I would punish him for it, he ran away as fast as his Legs could carry him.

The Chevalier secures them.

He sends the Pyx with the Host on Board.

They all retire.

The Chaplain receives the Host in Ceremony.

Proclamation made on Board, for all Persons, upon Pain of

I then bid an Officer who follow'd me, to take a Cloth which lay on the Altar, and to wrap up the *Pyx* and *Ciborium*, in the most respectful manner possible, and to carry them immediately into my Ship-boat; it being high time to carry it off, every Part of the Church being in a Flame. The Village was half consum'd, when I gave Word for beating the *Tattoo*, upon which all my Men retreated, a Sailor excepted, whom I lost I know not how, and never heard of him afterwards.

BEING got on Board, the Chaplain cloath'd in his Surplice and Stole came and took the *Holy Sacrament*, and laid it on a little Altar, which had been erected for that Purpose, and where Wax Tapers were set, which burnt at that Night.

IN order to attone, to the utmost of my Power, for the Prophanation which had been perpetrated in that Church, whence I knew several Vessels, &c. had

been  
mat  
on  
com  
Dea  
Han  
ment  
confe  
have  
venin  
as ma  
tal Ve  
rich;  
few A  
kept  
I w  
when  
on Bo  
ge to  
ng to  
airs.  
ny Ex  
nd fe  
Treatm  
ntreat  
ery v  
nowin  
assly w  
orc'd t  
which,  
antage  
me H

be

been carried off; I caused Proclamation, an Hour after we were got on Board, to be made, by which I commanded every Man, upon Pain of Death, to put into the Chaplain's Hands before Night, whatever Ornaments, Sacred Vessels, and other things consecrated to Divine Worship, might have been plunder'd. That very Evening they brought him six Chalices, as many Pattens, and twenty Sacerdotal Vestments, some of which were very rich; and the whole was restor'd, a few Albes excepted, which the Soldiers kept to turn into Shirts.

1701.

Death, to  
return all  
the Sacred  
Vessels, &c,

I was preparing to bombard *Fiume*, when the *French* Consul at *Ragusa* came on Board. I had seen him in my Voyage to *Courehoula*, and he was now going to *Fiume* upon some private Affairs. The Magistrates, terrified at my Expedition to *Trieste* and *Lourano*, and fearing to meet with the same Treatment, engag'd him to go and treat me not to molest them. I was very well pleas'd with this Step, knowing that the Result of this Embassy would be, that they would be forc'd to make a large Contribution; which, in Fact, was of greater Advantage to the King, than to demolish some Houses with my Bombs.

The *French* Consul at *Ragusa*, sent by the Inhabitants to beg him to spare their City.



1701.

His Artifice  
on this Oc-  
casion, in  
order to ob-  
tain Contri-  
bution.

THE better to conceal my Thoughts, I answered the Deputy, that it would be almost impossible to indulge his Request; that I had express Orders to bombard, and particularly the City of *Fiume*, which was to be more severely treated than the rest; that I was heartily sorry for it, especially finding he pleaded in its Favour; but that it would be of the utmost Prejudice to me, in case I pretended to spare it; however, that for his Sake, and to shew him the great Stress which the King's Officers lay on the Recommendation of a *French* Consul, I would venture not to bombard the City, provided the Citizens would pay a large Contribution, which, I said, could only justify me to the Court.

Threatens  
to burn the  
City down.

To omit nothing that might intimidate the Consul, I ordered several Fire-works to be play'd off before him in the Water; and made him believe that the Bombs would be fill'd with the same kind of combustible Matter, and that I should burn the City to Ashes, in case I once began, which was my Resolution to do: However, since I had let them into an Expedient to save their City from Destruction, I said I would not go from my Word; but then, that they must take care to make

a la  
muf  
T  
quire  
any  
Crov  
Maje  
Arma  
ful in  
that  
to ra  
the C  
case  
the In  
mit t  
bring  
to red  
Ragusa  
Terms  
provid  
ion of  
give m  
Present  
THIS  
Consul  
ered t  
efore,  
nent, t  
ther t  
night b  
im to g  
ession t  
order to

a large Contribution, or otherwise I must put my Design in Execution. 1701.

THE Consul asked what Sum I required; I told him I could not bate any thing of a hundred thousand Crowns, in order to indemnify his Majesty, for part of the Expence this Armament had put him to. The Consul in the utmost Consternation reply'd, that it would be impossible for *Fiume* to raise such a Sum. He told me that the Country was poor, and that in case I did not abate in my Demands, the Inhabitants must be forc'd to submit to whatever Hardships I should bring upon them, for want of Money to redeem themselves from Ruin. The *Ragufans* address'd me in such persuasive Terms, that I promis'd to spare them, provided they'd only raise a Contribution of forty thousand Crowns, and give me a thousand Sequins by way of Present.

He asks a Contribution of a hundred thousand Crowns.

The French Consul pleads for the City.

Com-pounds for forty thousand Crowns and 1000 Sequins.

THIS being agreed upon, I told the Consul that my Soldiers having plundered the Church of *Lourano* the Day before, I desired that the Holy Sacrament, the Sacred Vessels, and several other things that had been purloin'd, might be carried to *Fiume*; and begg'd him to get the Clergy to come in Procession the next Day, on the Shore, in order to receive the Whole with all

The Author desires the Clergy of *Fiume* may receive the stolen Host, &c.

1701. possible Decency and Respect. This he willingly undertook, and promised to acquit himself of the Commission in a proper manner.

The Host is carried to the City.

UPON his making this Promise, the next Morning at Day-break, I ordered my Boat to be got ready, over which an Awning (a small Sail) was fix'd; and an Altar being set up in it, the Host was set thereon. The Chaplains, cloath'd in their Surplices, went on Board, and were row'd towards the City, singing Psalms, and other Prayers of the Church in a standing Posture.

Convoy'd by four Gallies.

FOR fear lest the Enemy should use Treachery upon this Occasion, I ordered the Boat to be convoy'd by four Gallies or Brigantines, with Oars. The *Sieur Deschiens*, who was to command this little Fleet, was on Board the Boat with a Drum. As it was a dead Calm all the time they sail'd, the Wax-tapers which were set on the Altar were not blown out, which made the Whole a Sight equally new and affecting.

Treachery of the Inhabitants, who fire upon his Boat.

BEING come to a certain Distance from the City, the Commander ordered the Convoy to stop, and advanced alone in the Boat, almost up to the Walls; but finding no Body there, he was much surpriz'd, and order'd



the Drum to beat a Call; immediately he was answer'd by a Volley of Small-shot, and about twenty Cannon, loaded with old Nails, &c. which by good Luck did no Execution. The Chaplains, who were far from expecting such a Salute, plump'd down their Heads, and were so terrified with the Serenade, that it was a hard Matter to get them upon their Legs again. After such a Reception, there was no going further; so that he was oblig'd to go back, and the Squadron returned on Board, where one of the Chaplains said Mass and consumed the Hosts.

1701.  
The Chaplains in a Panic.

They return with the Hosts.

SURPRIZED at so unexpected a Change, and not being able to guess what should be the Reason that the Citizens should act so different from their Behaviour the Day before, I asked some *Venetians* who lived not far from the Place where I liv'd, what could be the Reason of it. They answered, That whilst the Consul was treating with me about the Contribution, one of the Imperial Field-Officers arriv'd there, with Orders to assemble the Militia, in order to oppose me; that the General would not hear any mention of a Contribution; that he had encourag'd the Citizens; and that they had been all Night raising

An Imperial Field-Officer comes to the City, and raises the Militia.

1701.

sing Batteries, in order to put the City in a Posture of Defence.

Finds it would be to no purpose to attack.

IN order to ascertain my self of the Truth of this Advice, I was very glad to approach the Place, in order to view it, and see if notwithstanding what had happen'd I could not Bombard; I sound- ed near the Walls, and found 80 Fa- thom; but perceiv'd, by the great Num- ber of Cannon that were fir'd, that it was to no purpose to attempt. However, be- fore I went off, I fir'd some Volleys of Cannon upon the City, but they did little Execution; so that, having no better Employment, I resolv'd to go a Cruising as before.

Writes to Cardinal de Fanson about the Plunder of *Lourano*.

BEFORE I set Sail, I wrote to Cardi- nal de Fanson, concerning the Plunder of the Church of *Lourano*, and acquainted him with the Reception I had met with from those of *Fiume*, when I endeavoured to make them give up what had been carried off. I begg'd his Eminence to speak to the Pope of it, and to have his Orders with regard to the Restitution that was to be made. His Holiness was well pleas'd with the great Zeal I had discover'd for Religion; and was so good as to order a most obliging Letter to be writ to me on that Head, in which I was or- dered to carry all those Ornaments, &c. to *Ancona*, where they were to be gi-

The Pope orders the Ornaments, &c. at *Lan- vano*, to be carried to *Ancona*.

ven t  
woul  
Chur  
A  
Fium  
Toulon  
"Twa  
vision  
were  
Servic  
ter no  
Ships  
pecial  
wante  
olved  
my ow  
Som  
in orde  
French  
siderab  
I took  
the M  
Orders  
els of  
those F  
them in  
Ancon  
Our La  
Zeal wi  
ave vi  
o what  
pense I  
made  
vet

ven to the Fathers of the Mission, who would take care to restore them to the Church which had been plunder'd.

1701.

A little after my Departure from *Fiume*, a Frigate was sent to me from *Toulon*, commanded by Mr. *de Ligondes*.

A Frigate  
sent him  
from *Toulon*;

It was laden with Ammunition and Provisions. Considering the Season we were in, this Vessel was fitter for the Service, than that I sailed in; for Winter now came on apace, when large Ships cannot so well bear the Sea, especially the *Adriatic*. Besides, my own wanted careening, and therefore I resolved to go on Board this, and send my own back to *France*.

He goes on  
Board her,  
and sends  
the other  
back.

SOME Days after I went to *Ancona*, in order to settle Accompts with the *French* Consul, who had advanc'd considerable Sums for the Squadron; and I took care to send to the Fathers of the Mission, agreeable to the Pope's Orders, the Vestments and sacred Vessels of the Church of *Lourano*, and those Fathers were so good as to take them into their Charge.

Vestments;  
&c. of *Lourano*  
given  
to the Fa-  
thers.

*Ancona* lies but four Leagues from *Our Lady of Loretto*; and the great Zeal with which the Faithful of all Ages have visited this holy Chappel, joyn'd to what had been told me of the immense Riches which are preserved in it, made me desire to visit it. Some

He visits *Lo-  
retto*.

G 5

Gentle



1701. Gentlemen, my Friends, furnish'd me with Chaises, and fresh Horses, so as to enable me to go thither, and return the next Day. I arrived at *Loretto* early in the Morning; but whilst I was taking a Moment's Rest in the Inn, I was surpriz'd to see the Governor come to me, who had Notice of my Arrival from the Officer who superintended the Port.

The Governor comes to him.

The Governor invites him to his Palace,

He told me, at his coming up, that hearing I was in the Town, he was uneasy 'till he had paid his Respects; desired me to go to his Palace; and said he would not suffer a Person of my Distinction to stay in an Inn. I gave him due Thanks for his great Civility, but begg'd him to leave me at my Liberty, as I could make but a very short Stay. And upon my telling him, that I was come purely out of Devotion, and to view the Magnificence of the Church of *Loretto*, he took his Leave

The Governor sends two Jesuits to shew him the Place.

The prodigious Riches

and sent me immediately after, two Jesuits, the one a *Frenchman*, the other *Flemming*, who were so good as to shew me every thing that was to be seen.

AFTER hearing Mass, and praying some time before the Altar of the Virgin, I was shew'd immense Riches, an almost numberless Multitude of precious Stones of all Kinds and Prices

a pro  
massy  
Cibor  
rich'd  
Numb  
Pearl;  
that t  
infinite  
ceiv'd  
I on

was, u  
kind  
Place  
the Fre  
that I  
Light  
gainst,  
casion  
with o  
ple of  
ridicul  
not alt  
but rea  
employ'd  
Strang  
Labour  
Subsist

At r  
famous  
of Lor  
to the  
French

a prodigious Number of Statues of 1702.  
massy Silver, Crosses, Chalice, and  
Ciborium, most of them Gold, en-  
rich'd with precious Stones; a vast  
Number of Vestments adorn'd with  
Pearl; in a Word, I saw so many,  
that their Number and Magnificence  
infinitely surpass'd the Idea I had con-  
ceiv'd of them.

I only made one Objection, which  
was, upon my being oblig'd to pay a  
kind of Tribute as we went from  
Place to Place; and this I hinted to  
the *French* Jesuit. The Father answer'd,  
that I was not to view this in a certain  
Light; that the Tribute I objected a-  
gainst, had indeed frequently given oc-  
casion to Libertines to be very la-  
vish of their Raillery; but that Peo-  
ple of Sense, did not find any thing  
ridiculous in it. To say Truth, he was  
not altogether in the Wrong; it being  
but reasonable that they who are em-  
ploy'd to shew these Treasures to  
Strangers, should be paid for their  
Labour; and gain sufficient for their  
Subsistence.

Objects a-  
gainst pay-  
ing for the  
Sight,

Is reconcil-  
led to it.

At my Return to *Ancona*, I was de-  
sirous of visiting the Cardinal Bishop  
of *Loretto*, and mentioned my Design  
to the Marquis of *Benin Casa*, the  
*French* Consul; who answer'd, that it  
would

Desires to  
visit the Bi-  
shop of Lo-  
retto,

1702. would be very proper, but that the Ceremonial must be first settled.

But the Ceremonial must first be settled,

As I was very little acquainted with the *Italian* Customs, I asked what Ceremonial he meant. "All I intend, says I, is just to pay my Respects to the Cardinal; and therefore only desire to know whether it may be acceptable or not." The Marquis looking upon me, and smiling, "Sir (says he) I find you are not acquainted with our Customs; 'tis not here as in *France*, where little Ceremony is made. In *Italy*, every Step a Man takes is observed, and may be of more or less Consequence; but don't let that trouble you; this Affair concerns me, and I'll go immediately to the Cardinal's Master of the Ceremonies, when we will agree upon the Reception which a Man of your Character ought to meet with."

THE Whole was settled after this manner.

Order of it.

'T WAS ordered that I should go in a Coach attended by all my Servants, and a-light at the Cardinal's Door; that all his Eminence's Domesticks should come and receive me without the Gate of his Palace; that I should first go in with my Train, that the Cardinal's Officers should follow, and that

that  
midd  
Train  
ster  
me in  
that  
set un  
the C  
that  
shoul  
ed m  
Emin  
Door  
a Co  
per.

TH  
this C  
but t  
would

TH  
in the  
tht C  
but l  
instea  
Canop  
havin  
" me,  
" afte  
" ner.  
" mat  
" I ha  
" sped



1702.



that we should walk in this Order to the middle of the Hall, where the whole Train should stop; that the chief Master of the Ceremonies should conduct me into another Hall, made ready for that Purpose, where there should be set under a Canopy, an Easy Chair for the Cardinal, and a Chair for me; that the Master of the Ceremonies should leave me, after having conducted me into the Hall, into which his Eminence should come by another Door, when I might make him such a Compliment as I should think proper.

THE Consul told me farther, that this Cardinal spoke very good *French*, but that because of his Dignity, he would speak to me in *Italian*.

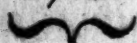
THE whole Ceremony was perform'd in the manner abovementioned, 'till the Cardinal's Arrival in the Hall; but his Eminence being come in, instead of seating himself under the Canopy, came up to me, and after having embrac'd me, "Sir (says he to me, in *French*) I won't receive you after the *Italian*, but the *French* manner. I am Cardinal de Janson's intimate Friend, and humble Servant. "I have a particular Esteem and Respect for your Name, and your Self,

The Cardinal changes it, to do the Chevalier the greater Honour.

The Cardinal's Compliment,

"Sir,

1702.



"Sir, in particular; who have atchieved such glorious Actions for the Honour of the King your Master, and perform'd such glorious Exploits in the *Gulph*. I'm intirely devoted to his most Christian Majesty, and always ready to support his Interests on all Occasions.

The Chevalier's Answer

They joke upon the Ceremoniousness of the *Italians*.

I thank'd him for his Civilities, and the singular Honour he did me. Our Conversation was longer than is usual in such Cases. We were very merry upon the Ceremoniousness of the *Italians*, and the Fatigue it puts a Man to. As I took my Leave, the Cardinal embrac'd me, and continuing to rally upon the same Subject; "Tho' (says he) our Ceremonial is vastly troublesome, we (says he) must go through part of it at least; I'll now assume a grave Countenance, and will wait upon you with it to the middle of the Hall, where I'll leave you, with a sort of a Nod, but shan't speak a Word to you; and this being done, my Officers will reconduct you to your Coach, walking before you." And having said this, he left me, when the Whole was performed as the Cardinal had told me.

He takes Leave of the Cardinal.

The Cardinal returns the Visit,

SOME Days after, he sent Word that he intended to return my Visit, when

I rec  
Hou  
gulat  
ny I  
it wa  
featin  
to me

A  
I ent  
Nobi  
*Italia*  
and e  
quis.  
being  
riety  
being  
extra  
Rago

Th  
thing  
casior  
ly the  
Gent  
*Mark*  
after  
me;

*Quest*  
*I take*

I  
Cook  
Wor  
loud  
yet n

1702.

I receiv'd him in the *French* Consul's House, the Ceremonial being first regulated; but as there were a great many Persons present at this Interview, it was very short; and the Cardinal seating himself in his Easy Chair, spoke to me only in *Italian*.

A few Days before my Departure, I entertain'd a great Company of the Nobility of *Ancona* at Dinner. The *Italians* are very lavish of their Titles, and every Man is a Count or a Marquis. We had several Ladies, and it being a Fish-Day, I had a great Variety of excellent Fish; and my Cook, being resolv'd to exert himself in an extraordinary manner, toss'd up all the Ragouts with Lard.

He entertains the Nobility of *Ancona* at Dinner,

THE *Italians*, who seldom use any thing but wretched Oil on these Occasions, prais'd very much (particularly the Ladies) the *French* Oil; but a Gentleman in the Company, Count *Mark Antonio*, who had frequently eat after this Way, directing himself to me; Monsieur de *Fourbin*, says he, *Questo me pare oglio di porco*, that is, *I take this for Hog's Oil*.

Joke of an *Italian* Count upon the tossing up of the Ragouts.

I had before observ'd what my Cook had done, but did not answer a Word; and tho' the Count spoke so loud that any Body might hear him, yet no Body took the least Notice of what

what



1702. what he said, and we all eat on, as if this Circumstance had not hap-  
pen'd.

He receives  
a Man on  
Board his  
Ship who  
had mur-  
ther'd his  
Brother,

I was now preparing to return to *Brindisi*, when the Consul came and desired me to take on Board a Man that was got into an ugly Scrape, for which he was pursued. As I imagined I should do a Piece of Service to an unfortunate Person, I immediately granted his Request, and a Moment after he came. I was then so curious as to ask him what unlucky Affair he was got into, when he answer'd with a most cool and unruffled Air, *Ho amazzato il mio fratello; that is, I've kill'd my Brother; for quarelling with him, I shot at him, and finding he was not dispatch'd, I killed him outright with my Poniard.* The Blackness of his Guilt, and the Coolness with which he spake to me, struck me so much, that looking upon him with Horror, "Since (says I) you have not scrupled to kill your Brother, there's no doubt but you'd willingly treat me with the same Barbarity. God forbid I should keep such a Monster on Board my Ship!" and saying these Words, I had him put a-shore, and set Sail.

Story of  
Cardinal  
*de Janson's.*

THIS Murther thus perpetrated in cold Blood, recalls to my Mind a Story which Cardinal *de Janson* told me  
one

one Day, as we were going from *Paris* 1702.  
to *Beauvais*, which is as follows.

A Roman Lord, who had a very fine Park, in which were a great Number of Stags, had forbid his Servants to kill any of them. One of them had the Misfortune to offend against this Order, for firing at some other Beast, he miss'd, and killed one of the Stags that was hid behind the Bushes. The poor Fellow who had done this, dreaded his Master's Anger so much, that he fled to *Genoa*, and going on Board a Vessel, was taken by the *Algerines*.

A Fellow  
kills a Stag,  
thro' Mi-  
stake.

Is taken by  
the *Alge-  
rines*.

THE *Italian* Nobleman being in-  
form'd some time after, that his Ser-  
vant was in Captivity at *Algiers*, went  
to Cardinal *de Fanson*, and instantly be-  
sought him to desire the *French* Con-  
sul to get the poor Fellow redeemed,  
be the Ransom ever so great. The  
Cardinal, struck with his Generosity,  
could not forbear applauding him, up-  
on which he wrote to the Consul, who  
got the Man back, and sent him to  
*Rome*. The Gentleman came and  
thank'd his Eminence, paid the Mo-  
ney which had been given for his  
Ransom, and some Days after had his  
Servant assassinated; having got him  
redeem'd, only for the sake of Re-  
venge, tho' his Crime was involuntary.

His Master  
redeems  
him, and  
has him  
murther'd.

1702.

The Men he  
had demand-  
ed of the  
Viceroy of  
Naples, sent  
to him.

The Succour  
comes too  
late.

He Excuses  
Don Manuel  
de Silva's  
Delay.

I was very much surpriz'd, upon my Arrival at *Brindisi*, to hear that the Soldiers I had so long demanded of the Kingdom of *Naples*, were arriv'd, and were gone some Days before; as also the Gallies commanded by *Don Manuel de Silva*, who was forc'd to return to *Gallipoli* for want of Provisions.

HAD this Succour come in time, I should have been able to attempt many things; and should have infested most of the Emperor's Ports; but the *Spaniards* are so vastly slow, that they always come a Day after the Fair. The Season was so far advanc'd, that tho' I had met with the Soldiers and Gallies at *Brindisi*, it would have been to no purpose for me to attempt any thing.

A few Days after my Arrival, the abovementioned *Don Manuel de Silva* returned by Land to *Brindisi*, to desire me to write to the *French* Ambassador at the *Spanish* Court; and to get him excus'd for not joyning me at the Time appointed. He threw the whole Blame on the Viceroy of *Sicily*, who had neglected to furnish him with Provisions. I enquired into the Particulars, and finding that what he said was true, I wrote in such Terms as he desired.

SOME



SOME time after, I fell ill of a Pleurisy, and was cur'd with the utmost Difficulty. At last, the Season not permitting me to attempt any Exploit; and being also desirous of saving the King's Ship, which now leak'd on every Side, I resolv'd to return to France, in order to refit. I set sail with the *Sieur de Fougis*, whose Ship also was very much out of Repair, and left the *Sieur Deschiens* in my Post, with Instructions how to act.

In our Course, we had so much bad Weather, that I was twenty times upon the point of Sinking, or running ashore in order to save my Crew; so that it was with prodigious Toil we reach'd the Coasts of *Provence*. I was off the *Antibes*, when I spy'd twelve *French Gallies*, which I knew had the King of *Spain* on Board, who had taken Shipping in *Italy*, in order to return into his own Dominions; as he gave him a Royal Salute, one of my Cannon burst, and kill'd or maim'd ten of my Men.

A large Splinter that weigh'd above an hundred Pounds, flew under my Chin; and I received only a few slight Wounds in several Places. I was very happy in my Ill-fortune; for had I been either half an Inch taller, or had it flew that Distance nearer me, I either

1702.

Falls ill of  
a Pleurisy.  
Recovers,

Returns to  
France.

Like to sink

Meets the  
King of  
Spain going  
to his Do-  
minions.  
Salutes him,  
and loses  
ten Men,

The Che-  
valier nar-  
rowly e-  
scapes being  
kill'd,

1702. ther should have lost my Jaw-bone, or my Life. At last I came in Sight of *Toulon*, my Ship being ready to go to the Bottom, and my Sailors quite off their Legs. I sent for Succours, which came very seasonably, otherwise I possibly should never have reach'd the Port.

Pays his Compliments to the King of Spain with a Patch under his Chin.

THE King of *Spain*, being fatigu'd with the Sea, landed at *Antibes*, and pursued his Journey by Land; as he pass'd by *Toulon*, I went and paid him my Compliments, with a great Patch under my Chin. His Majesty did me the Honour to thank me for the Services I had done in the *Gulph*, under the *Spanish* Flag; and presented me with a Gold Sword, enriched with Diamonds, which he himself put into my Hand, with the highest Testimony of his Favour.

Mr. de *Quesne Monier* goes in his Stead,

UPON my Arrival at *Toulon*, I met in the Road a Fifty-Gun Ship, just going to set Sail, with Orders to join me in the *Gulph*, and succeed that which Mr. *Deschiens* had brought me. My Arrival quite chang'd the whole Design; and whether it were, that they were desirous of making the *Venetians* some Satisfaction, or some other Reason with which I am unacquainted, Mr. *Du Quesne Monier* was order'd to Sail in my room.

I was not chagrin'd at this Change, 1703.  
 but gave my Successor proper Instru-  
 ctions, who told me, he foresaw he  
 should be the Victim of that Com-  
 mission; and that since I had quitted  
 the Expedition, he suppos'd there was  
 no more Good to be done.

His Com-  
 pliment to  
 the Cheva-  
 lier.

HE was right in his Conjectures: Disadvan-  
 tages the  
 new Com-  
 dore wou'd  
 meet with  
 in the Ex-  
 pedition,  
 had met with great Success, tho'  
 with small Force; but then it must  
 be confess'd I had engag'd a Country  
 unprovided with Troops, and the few  
 that were in it, very raw and undisci-  
 plin'd; whereas when I had left it,  
 the People were all up in Arms. The  
 Emperor had sent good Officers into  
 it, who had made considerable Levies,  
 with which they had form'd several  
 Bodies that were ready to march  
 where-ever they should be order'd;  
 and capable of making a Resistance,  
 at least for some Time. After having  
 repos'd my self some Days at Toulon,  
 I set out for Court, where I arriv'd  
 at the beginning of the Year 1703.

Goes to  
 Court.

I had undertaken this Journey with  
 so much the more Pleasure, as I de-  
 pended upon being rewarded for my  
 Services, being sensible what my two  
 last Campaigns merited; and tho' the  
 Minister himself had not expatiated  
 so handsomely upon them in his Let-  
 ters, I knew I had serv'd his Ma-  
 jesty

Expects to  
 be rewarded



1703.

He is slander'd and neglected.

Complains to the Minister.

Who refuses to present him to the King.

The Author is highly offended, and waits upon the King.

Waits on him.

jesty so well, that I might justly suppose the Court would take some Notice of them.

NEVERTHELESS I was mistaken and so far from being judg'd worthy of a Reward, I was forc'd to defend myself both against Slander and Prejudice. The first Thing I heard of my Arrival, was, that a Promotion had been made of Sea-Officers, without taking the least Notice of me. This gave me inexpressible Uneasiness and not knowing what I could impute it to, I waited upon the Minister and complain'd to him that I had been neglected at a Time, when I flatter myself my Services would have met with some Recompence.

THE Minister receiv'd me very coldly; and upon my desiring him to present me to the King, he refus'd to indulge me that Favour, by telling me I was well enough known to his Majesty; and that I might go myself.

SURPRIZ'D at this Reception, which I little expected, I answer'd prettily, upon my leaving the Room, which I did immediately, that I could indeed present myself to the King. His Majesty was pleas'd to tell me, that he had made my Name famous in the late Campaign. *Sire, says I, I have infest*

our En  
brice k  
be good  
In th  
usted  
with f  
ould n  
ontent  
nd it  
equen  
ence,  
ted at  
have  
omplain  
yself i  
ay goi  
Gent  
with  
thing  
serves  
there  
Audie  
ran in  
rain,  
from  
a Hea  
y Re  
ould n  
ven m  
eak to  
ar me  
U No  
Sir, f

*our Enemies to the utmost of my Power; 1703.*  
*brice happy ! if my Services have had*  
*be good Fortune to please your Majesty.*

IN the mean time, I was highly dis-  
 tressed at the Reception I had met  
 with from the Minister ; and as I

His gra-  
 cious Re-  
 ception.

could not guess the Motive of his Dis-  
 content, I was absolutely resolv'd to  
 send it out. For this Purpose I had  
 frequently desir'd him to give me Au-  
 dience, but to no purpose. Exaspe-

The Mini-  
 ster uses  
 him ill.

rated at this Refusal, and determin'd  
 to have the Satisfaction, at least of  
 complaining and being heard, I thrust  
 myself into the House, as he was one  
 day going in, and spoke thus : " Sir, a

He runs in-  
 to his  
 House, and  
 will speak  
 to him.

Gentleman who serves his Sovereign  
 with Zeal and Vigour, and has no-  
 thing to reproach himself with, de-  
 serves at least to be heard ; and  
 therefore I desire you to give me  
 Audience." Saying these Words,  
 I ran in ; and continuing in the same  
 strain, " Sir, says I, I won't stir  
 from hence, till you have given me

a Hearing." The Minister finding  
 my Resolution, and supposing he  
 could not get rid of me, till he had  
 given me Satisfaction, told me, I might  
 speak to him, and that he was ready to  
 hear me.

The Mini-  
 ster hears  
 him.

Upon being allow'd this Liberty ;  
 Sir, says I, what is it I have done

He com-  
 plains of  
 the Injustice

" to

1703. *that was done him.* "to make you use me thus? You  
 "have just now made several Promotions in [the Navy; what Crime  
 "have I committed to be thus forgotten? I have lately signaliz'd myself  
 "in the King's Service; I have ventur'd my Life a thousand Times for  
 "the Glory of the King's Service;  
 "and therefore might I not justly expect some little Notice would be  
 "taken of me, and that I should reap some Benefit, for the many Fatigues  
 "I have undergone, and the several Dangers to which I have expos'd  
 "myself?"

*His Answer.*

*That he had done his Majesty signal Service.*

*That he has embezel'd so Monies,*

"What have you to complain of? says he. Have you not paid yourself? and have you not got a hundred thousand Crowns by your two Campaigns?" Surpriz'd at what I heard; "If, says I, I have got an hundred thousand Crowns, you ought to be very glad of it, since so considerable a Sum will give me a better Opportunity of serving his Majesty: But, Sir, what Wretch has had the Audaciousness to advance such a Falshood? Be so good as to tell me, whom I got so much Money from? A hundred thousand Crowns is a large Sum of Money. I have not embezel'd the King's Money, and the Captures I have made,

" m  
 " o  
 " an  
 " fu  
 " C  
 " ha  
 " P  
 " yo  
 " to  
 " "  
 " of  
 " En  
 " be  
 " Se  
 " dan  
 " con  
 " hin  
 " tha  
 " can  
 " to  
 " the  
 " lots  
 " she  
 " and  
 " to-r  
 " seve  
 " wri  
 " acti  
 " may  
 " sure  
 " have  
 " case  
 " ling  
 " Vol



“ made, have been put into the Hands 1703.  
 “ of your Agents, who must give you  
 “ an Account of them. This being  
 “ suppos’d, the hundred thousand  
 “ Crowns you mention to me, must  
 “ have come out of some Body’s  
 “ Pocket; and I beg the Favour of  
 “ you to tell me, what Man pretends  
 “ to have lost such a Sum.

And to Mr.  
*de Vauvray.*

Refers to  
 his Book of  
 Accounts.

“ I have kept a very exact Account  
 “ of every Thing I took from the  
 “ Enemy, and of the Expences I have  
 “ been oblig’d to for the King’s  
 “ Service. Mr. *de Vauvray*, Inten-  
 “ dant of *Toulon*, has audited my Ac-  
 “ compts; be pleas’d to enquire of  
 “ him, and he’ll inform you more of  
 “ that Matter than any other Person  
 “ can. And in case you don’t care  
 “ to trust any Person but yourself;  
 “ the Officers, the Writers, and Pi-  
 “ lots, have also their Journals to  
 “ shew, which are a Check upon mine,  
 “ and these you may easily see. I’ll  
 “ to-morrow put into your Hands my  
 “ several Books, in which I have  
 “ written Day by Day, all the Trans-  
 “ actions of my two Campaigns; you  
 “ may peruse them all at your Lei-  
 “ sure, and I shall be very glad to  
 “ have my Conduct examin’d. In  
 “ case I have been guilty of embezel-  
 “ ling, I justly deserve to be punish’d;

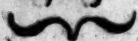
Offers to  
 shew his  
 Journal to  
 prove his  
 Assertion.

VOL. II.

H

“ and

1703.



The Minister put to a Nonplus, reproaches him for not taking the Castle of Mezzola.

Proves he could not.

“ and will willingly consent to it;  
 “ but if I have faithfully done my  
 “ Master Service, I am entitled to re-  
 “ quire such a Recompence as my Ser-  
 “ vices may deserve.

THE Minister hardly knowing what to say, my Reasons being unanswerable, reproach'd me for not taking the Castle of *Mezzola*, tho' he had so earnestly desir'd it. I answer'd, that I went up to it, but found it impossible to succeed in the Attempt; and that I did not think my not being able to work Miracles a great Crime. That whoever had told him it was feasible, were either ignorant or presumptuous Creatures; that this Castle could never be taken but by a regular Siege; that he was very sensible, I had neither the Soldiers, nor a Train of Artillery necessary for such an Enterprize; and tho' I had had sufficient of these, yet Prince *Eugene's* Army lying just by, ought to have prevented my once thinking to attempt it.

“ But tho' you would not do this  
 “ says the Minister, Mr. *du Quesne*  
 “ will. Sir, says I, Mr. *du Quesne*  
 “ knows better than ever to set a-  
 “ bout it; and I'll give my Head if  
 “ ever he succeeds. But consider, Sir  
 “ I have made several very dangerous  
 “ Attempts in the *Gulph*; and all this  
 “ with

1703.

“ without any Order for that Purpose, and merely by my own immediate Impulses ; and purely to take the Opportunity which the State of Things then gave me, of serving the King. This being suppos'd, what Probability is there, that after having known your Intentions, and the Desire you had of having that Castle taken, I should have refus'd to second it, especially had it been so easy a Matter as you represent it.” Our Conversation ended here, and I withdrew in the utmost Anguish of Heart, to see me thus fall a Victim to Calumny.

Goes away highly dissatisfied.

HOWEVER, in order that I might have nothing to reproach myself with, I made my Court very assiduously for three Days together, but was not able to get a Word from the Minister, which vex'd me to the Heart, so that I was an hundred times upon the point of unburthening my Mind at once.

Makes his Court for three Weeks.

WHILST I was in this Disquietude, the Court, having given Orders for the fitting out a considerable Fleet, which the Count de Toulouse was to command, I was appointed to command one of the Ships.

The Command of a Ship given him.

THIS Incident, tho' it plainly shew'd my Services had not been altogether



1703. displeasing, since they still employ'd me, was not yet compleatly satisfactory. I wanted something more, and the Minister's Silence on this Occasion quite exasperated me, whereupon I went to him, and carried my Journals, in order that he himself might see all I had done in my two Campaigns.

Carries him  
his Jour-  
nals.

"SIR, says I, as I have been so dilatory in presenting you with my Books, 'twas purely that you might have Leisure to take all the necessary Informations both for and against me. May I now presume to enquire whether you have justified me in your Mind; and whether you have clear'd up the Affair, with regard to the hundred thousand Crowns you were told I have gain'd?"

He confess'd, he had writ every where, but that every Body gave me an excellent Character, and that I must have brib'd all those about me. This Discourse exasperated me still more, when not being able to bridle my Anger, "SIR, says I, if the King is not satisfied with me, after the many Things I have atchiev'd for his Service, you yourself must have done me an ill Office on this Occasion; for since by your own Confession, notwithstanding the strict Enquiry you have made, you have not found

He re-  
proaches  
the Mini-  
ster.

"one

1703.

" one Person that can lay any thing  
 " to my Charge, I can suspect no Per-  
 " son but yourself.

" 'Tis a melancholy Considerati-  
 " on, that I cannot complain of any  
 " Person but yourself; and give me  
 " leave to tell you, had I been guilty  
 " of a Crime, you ought to have been  
 " the first to excuse it; since, after  
 " all, as chief Lord of the Navy, I  
 " have done you some Honour, in  
 " having exerted myself with tolera-  
 " ble Success, upon the Instructions  
 " you gave me; but I find, since  
 " Matters stand thus, I have nothing  
 " to do but to leave the Service; for  
 " to what Purpose would it be to ac-  
 " cept a Command, when the Mini-  
 " ster is my Enemy, at a Time he  
 " ought to have been my greatest  
 " Friend." Here I ended, and left  
 " his House with Rage and Indigna-  
 " tion.

Offers to  
leave the  
Service.

He leaves  
the Mini-  
ster in a  
Passion,

" THO' I had deliver'd myself in  
 " pretty sharp Terms, yet every thing  
 " was pretty well so far. There are some  
 " Occasions, on which it is necessary for  
 " a Man to expose his Grievances to the  
 " Court, and even with some Fire, o-  
 " therwise it would be to no Purpose.  
 " But a false Step I made on this Oeca-  
 " sion, was for complaining elsewhere  
 " than in the Minister's Cabinet; and for

An Error  
the Cheva-  
lier falls  
into,

1703.

Acquaints  
the Admi-  
ral with his  
Grievances.

Complains  
to the Ad-  
miral.

The Admi-  
ral's great  
Civility.

The King  
satisfied  
with his  
Services.

publishing the Reason I had to be dis-  
satisfied.

AT my leaving Mr. *de Pontchartrain*, I went and visited the Admiral, whom I acquainted with all these Particulars. I complain'd of the ill Reception I had met with, and the Necessity to which I was reduc'd, of leaving the Sea-Service, where there was nothing farther to be done for me; and wherein at the same time I should be molested by those very Persons who ought to be my Protectors.

THE Admiral, who had seen the Exploits I had perform'd in the *Gulph*, being station'd at *Messina*, in order to assist me in case of Necessity, as has been observ'd; was so good as to tell me, that he would not have me think of leaving the Service, which he said was very necessary; and that he would speak to the Minister, and even to the King, in case it were necessary.

TWO Days after, I was in the Royal Apartments as the King was going to Mass. The Admiral spying me, beckoned to me, and I went up to him, when he said, I have just spoke to his Majesty about you, who told me, he was very well satisfied with your Services, and that the Minister does not know what he talks about.

STRUCK



1703.

STRUCK with his Majesty's Goodness, I endeavour'd to express the great Sense I had of it, by assuring him, I was heartily sorry I had not an Opportunity of shewing it. *Let not that trouble you, says he, we'll find an Opportunity for it.*

THE Minister hearing that I publicly made heavy Complaints against him, was offended at it, and to punish me, took from me the Ship I was order'd to command, and gave it to another. From that Moment, I did not appear at the Navy-Office.

The Minister takes the Ship from him.

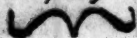
I had been about a Month absent from it, when the Marquis *de Janson* went to Mr. *de Ponchartrain*, in order to speak to him about the Chevalier *de Pennes*, whom the King of Spain had sent to Court. The Minister, who was still highly offended at all I had spoke to his Disadvantage, answer'd, he was very well satisfied with the Chevalier *de Pennes*, but had little reason to be so with the Chevalier *Forbin*.

He expresses his Disatisfaction to the Marquis *de Janson*.

THE Marquis, who was sensible that my Complaints, tho' indiscreet, had nevertheless some Foundation; reply'd, "Sir, the Chevalier *de Forbin* is my Relation, and I have a great Value and Esteem for him; nevertheless, had he been wanting in Re-

The Marquis's Answer.

1703.



He justifies  
the Cheva-  
lier.

“spect to you, I should be the first  
“to take him to task about it; and  
“would do all that lies in my Power,  
“to make him atone for it.

“HOWEVER, I think myself ob-  
“lig’d to tell you, that as he is a  
“brave Man; has serv’d his Majesty  
“with a Zeal, well known to the  
“whole World, and himself too, it  
“was scarce possible for him not to  
“let drop some grating Expressions;  
“to find himself disregarded; if he  
“quits the Sea, ’tis merely because he  
“thinks you are not his Friend, and  
“if this be so, he is not in the wrong  
“to leave the Service, since he would  
“never gain any thing by it, in case  
“the Minister makes it his Business  
“to cross all his Designs.

The Mini-  
ster pro-  
fesses to  
serve the  
Chevalier.

“I make it my Business to cross  
“his Designs! says Mr. *de Ponchar-*  
“*train*, he’s very much mistaken if  
“he harbours such a Thought: But  
“he is too warm, and he flew into a  
“Passion without giving me time to  
“justify him. He had been represent-  
“ed to me in a very disadvantageous  
“Light, by Persons whose Quality  
“exact’d a Belief; but now all my  
“Suspensions are remov’d, and there-  
“fore let him not be uneasy, but de-  
“pend upon me, when I assure him

“I’ll

"I'll serve him with Pleasure, when  
 "an Opportunity presents itself." 1703.  
 The Marquis thank'd him for his  
 Goodness, and added, he would inform  
 me of it, and that I should wait upon  
 him the next Day to thank him.

ACCORDINGLY I waited upon the  
 Minister the next Day, who received  
 me with uncommon Politeness, and  
 order'd five hundred Crowns to be gi-  
 ven me, and the Command of the  
*Rash* Man of War, and bid me go to  
*Toulon*, with Orders to secure the *Le-*  
*vant* Trade, and to cruize upon the  
 Privateers of *Flushing*. 'Tis thus that  
 after having let my Services go unre-  
 rewarded, (for I always suspected that he  
 sought every Occasion of wrangling  
 with me, purposely to prevent my  
 being advanc'd,) he imagin'd I should  
 think myself very happy in being re-  
 stor'd to Favour; and resuming an  
 Employment which I began to think  
 beneath me.

MY ill Usage, and the Complaints  
 I had made against the Minister, were  
 too public not to have reach'd *Pro-*  
*vence*; a Report was spread at *Toulon*,  
 that I was fallen in Disgrace, and that  
 the Court, desiring no longer to have  
 me in the Service, thought I had been  
 indulg'd a great Favour, in suffering

The Mini-  
 ster receives  
 him with  
 great Ci-  
 vility:  
 Gives him  
 500 Crowns  
 and the  
 Command  
 of a Ship;

A Report  
 to the  
 Chevalier's  
 Disadvan-  
 tage,  
 reaches  
*Provence*.



1703. me to retire whithersoever I thought proper.

His quondam Mistress revives the Prosecution.

She appeals to the Parliament, and is cast.

The Enemy came into the Road.

He is sent as a Scout.

UPON this News, my quondam Mistress who had accus'd me of a Rape, and had not taken any Notice of me for these two Years last past, set the Prosecution again on Foot. Advice of this was sent me to *Paris*, upon which I rid Post to *Toulon*, where after having gone thro' a Variety of Law-Suits, her Plea was not admitted; however, so far from submitting to this Sentence, she appeal'd to the Parliament; but to no Purpose, as will be shewn very soon.

THE Admiral arriv'd about that time at *Toulon*, where a considerable Armament had been prepar'd. The Army embark'd, but upon receiving Advice that the Enemy was enter'd our Seas with a superiour Force, it did not sail out of the Road; and I was sent out in order to observe the Motion of the Enemy.

I was inform'd that their Fleet of Merchant-Men was sail'd to the East, under a Convoy of six Men of War. I discover'd their Fleet going out of *Leghorn*, and follow'd it a little beyond the Islands of *Yvica* on the Coast of *Spain*; when observing they steer'd their Course towards *Gibraltar*, I re-

turn'd

turn'd  
Acco  
Rela  
babil  
Adm  
Ship  
to se  
Leva  
to M  
on B  
ing  
ster  
Hon  
and  
ques  
A  
St. S  
lon,  
Mer  
Leva  
whe  
got  
Stor  
com  
pest  
wit  
The  
the  
Shi  
tha  
tim  
Bot  
per

1703.

turn'd to *Toulon*, in order to give an Account of my Discovery. Upon the Relation I gave, there being no Probability of our putting out to Sea, the Admiral gave Orders for laying up the Shipping. As for myself, I was order'd to secure the Trade of *Marseilles* to the *Levant*; and I sail'd twice or thrice to *Malta*, where I landed, and took on Board some Knights who were going to *France*. *Perillos*, Grand Master of *Malta*, paid me all imaginable Honours, made me several Presents, and granted me several Favours I requested of him.

Goes to  
*Malta*.  
Is hand-  
somerely re-  
ceiv'd by  
the Grand  
Master.

ABOUT the end of the Year, viz, *St. Stephen's Day*, I set sail from *Toulon*, in order to convoy a Fleet of Merchant-Men that were going to the *Levant*. 'Twas very fine Weather when we set out; but scarce were we got four Leagues at Sea, when a Storm arose from the North-East, accompanied with Rain, and the Tempest was so dreadful, that I never met with any thing like it in my Life. The Impetuosity of the Waves, and the Impossibility of our working the Ship, reduc'd us to that Extremity, that we were more than an hundred times upon the point of sinking to the Bottom. The whole Fleet was dispers'd; several Ships shelter'd themselves

The Che-  
valier con-  
voys a Fleet  
of Mer-  
chant-Men.

A dreadful  
Storm.

1703. selves in the Islands of *Majorca* and *Yvica*, and others at *Barcelona* and *Rosa*.

Shelters  
himself in  
the Port of  
*Rosa*.

Then to  
*Barcelona*.

An Affair  
that con-  
cern'd the  
whole  
*French*  
Nation.

A Ship is  
taken.

I came to this last Port for Refuge, just ready to sink, and in a most miserable Condition. My Crew were quite spent; and I met with only one of the Merchant-Men I was convoying in this Harbour. After having refitted, I carried her back to *Toulon*, where hearing that the two Vessels which had the richest Lading on Board, were at *Barcelona*, I set sail after them, in order to convoy them to the *Levant*. Coming on Shore, the *French* Consul came to acquaint me of an Affair which concern'd the whole Nation, and for which he desir'd me to ingratiate myself with the Vice-Roy.

A *French* Bark richly laden had been taken, about three Weeks before, by a Privateer of *Flushing*. Bad Weather having forc'd them to put in at *Barcelona*, before they enter'd the Port, the Commander of the Privateer had promis'd the *French* Captain, that he would restore him his Vessel, provided he would hoist a White Flag, at his coming in; and thus preserv'd both himself and his Crew from being made Prisoners of War.

THE latter had accepted the Offer, and looking upon himself as Master of the

the  
Agr  
Flag  
Rov  
Agr  
law  
and  
son,  
T  
hop  
her  
in o  
he c  
glio,  
only  
it, b  
cum  
how  
me  
Hon  
unh  
V  
on t  
not  
wha  
whe  
whi  
wai  
ther  
bein  
ing  
I h  
Ant



1703.



the Vessel, as he actually was after this Agreement, had hoisted the *French* Flag; but *Don Francisco Velasco*, Vice-Roy of *Catalonia*, not regarding the Agreement; and looking upon it as lawful Prize, had confiscated the Bark, and thrown all the *Flusbingers* into Prison, but gave the *French* their Liberty.

THE Consul had address'd me, in hopes to recover this Bark, and to get her restor'd to the Owner. However, in order not to engage me in any Broil, he declar'd that the *Chevalier de Broglio*, Captain of a Ship, who had set sail only two Days since, had demanded it, but without Success. This last Circumstance gave me some Uneasiness; however, I thought it incumbent on me to venture a little, either for the Honour of the Flag, or to assist an unhappy Man who had been injur'd.

He is address'd to get a Bark restor'd.

WITH this Resolution I waited upon the Vice-Roy, but was told he was not to be spoke with. I then ask'd, what was the proper time to see him, when I was order'd to come at Eleven, which I did punctually. After having waited half an Hour, I ask'd, whether there were no Possibility of being admitted to Audience; and being still bid to wait, I said aloud, that I had no Notion of freezing in an Anti-chamber; that I was neither the

Waits on the Vice-Roy for that Purpose, and is not admitted to Audience,

Vice-

1705.

Vice-Roy's Subject nor Domestic; and that when-ever Officers had Business with Governors, the least thing that could be done, would be to give them a Hearing; and saying this, I left the Palace in a Passion, and return'd on Board.

The Vice-Roy enquires about him.

UPON this, the Vice-Roy wanted to know what haughty Captain this was, when he was told, 'twas the Chevalier *Forbin*. He then ask'd, whether it was the same who had cruiz'd in the *Adriatic*; and was told I was the Man. Upon this, he sent one of his Gentlemen on Board with the *French* Consul, to make an Apology; and to assure me, that I should not have waited so long, had they known who I was. The Consul intreated me earnestly to return back, assuring me, that I should have no room to complain of the Vice-Roy's Reception; that I might depend what he had the Honour of telling me was Fact; and that he would not be so positive in what he asserted, had he not the strongest Assurances of its being just.

He makes an Excuse for it.

He returns to the Vice-Roy's Palace.

THE next Day I returned ashore, and the Moment I appeared, all the Doors were set open. The Vice-Roy set me in as honourable a Seat as himself; a Table being between us, and plac'd in such a manner, that there was no

Pre-

Pre-  
Con-  
him  
up  
I  
was  
Cap-  
com-  
Kin-  
*Flus*  
they  
Arti-  
had  
be v-  
who  
reco-  
his  
thou-  
Frie-  
I  
ster-  
geth-  
my  
Situ-  
per-  
mon-  
cy  
and  
selve-  
'two  
not  
thol-

1704.

Precedency as to Seats. After the first Compliments were made, I acquainted him with the Reason of my waiting upon him.

I represented to him, how unjust it was to seize a Bark to which the *French* Captain had a Right, and which was come into the Harbour under the King's Flag; that notwithstanding the *Flushingers* were Masters of this Vessel, they had restored it without the least Artifice or Disguise, to the Person they had taken it from; and that it would be very hard, that this poor Captain, who by an unexpected happy Turn had recovered his Bark, should lose it by his coming into a Harbour, where he thought to have met with none but Friends.

Tells his Business,

Solicits for the Bark,

I further said, that altho' the Master's Title to the Ship was not altogether so clear as it should be, yet, in my Opinion, considering the present Situation of things, it would be proper to deviate a little from the common Forms, and desired his Excellency to consider, that since the King and all his Subjects ruin'd themselves to support the King of *Spain*, 'twould be strange, if the *French* were not be allow'd an *Asylum* in his Catholic Majesty's Ports.

The Justice of his Demand.

“ Sir,



1704.

The Viceroy  
puts a Que-  
stion to him

“ Sir, (says the Vice-roy) your Ar-  
guments are good, and I’d have  
us’d the very same, had I been in  
your Place; but if you, who are a  
*Frenchman*, had met with this Bark  
out at Sea, which for three Weeks  
had been in the Enemy’s Hands,  
would you not look upon it as good  
Prize? And should you think  
your self oblig’d to restore her, if  
you were required to do it? As  
this is the Case, I now ask you, if I  
have not the same Right; and whe-  
ther I have done the Captain the least  
Injury in confiscating her.

He restores  
the Bark.

A fine Com-  
pliment to  
the Cheva-  
lier.

“ However, I will forego my Right  
on this Occasion, since you desire  
it. This Prize is mine, and I make  
you a Present of it; but, to you  
your Self, and not either to the  
Owner, or the Nation. You have  
done my Master such signal Service  
in the *Gulph*, that you deserve to be  
indulg’d Favours that would be  
granted to no other Man living.”  
Thus did the Gratitude of a Foreign-  
er compensate in some measure for  
the Hardships I had met with from our  
Court.

I thank’d the Vice-roy for his Gene-  
rosity; and going to leave the Room,  
I spy’d the Master of the Vessel, who  
had follow’d me, in order to hear  
what

what  
kon’  
said  
roy,  
*Fren*  
“ his  
“ a l  
“ La  
“ re  
“ pr  
“ re  
“ w  
“ wi  
“ tu  
“ ha  
T  
he h  
very  
have  
wor  
sters  
“ E  
“ ti  
king  
and  
Kin  
Cou  
Man  
iy;  
not  
said  
wit  
so t  
on.

1704.

what Success I met with. I be-  
 kon'd him to come forward, and  
 said to him, in Presence of the Vice-  
 roy, the Consul, and several other  
*French* Gentlemen; "Captain James,  
 "his Excellence has just now made me  
 "a Present of your Bark, and all its  
 "Lading; when I requested him to  
 "return it, I did not mean to appro-  
 "priate it to my self, and therefore  
 "return it to you, as generously as it  
 "was given me; and all that I reserve,  
 "with regard to you, is the Grati-  
 "tude you owe me for the Service I  
 "have done you."

The Cheva-  
 lier presents  
 the Bark to  
 the Owner,

THE Vice-roy, astonished at what  
 he heard, told me, I must certainly be  
 very rich, otherwise I would never  
 have at once made a Present that was  
 worth upwards of thirty thousand Pia-  
 sters: "Sir (says I) the Example your  
 "Excellence has set me, is too beau-  
 "tiful not to be imitated;" Then ma-  
 king a very low Bow, I went away,  
 and inform'd the *Abbé d'Estrées*, the  
 King's Embassador at *Madrid*, the  
 Court, and Sheriffs of the City of  
*Marseilles*, of the Vice-roy's Generosi-  
 ty; but thought it would be prudent  
 not to mention the last Words he had  
 said to me, when he gave up his Right  
 with regard to the confiscated Vessel;  
 so that he was afterwards thank'd on  
 all

'Twas worth  
 upwards of  
 30000 Pia-  
 sters.

1704.

Sets Sail,  
and arrives  
at Malta.

all Sides, for having granted my Request in so obliging a manner.

A few Days after I set Sail with my two Merchant-men, when we arriv'd at *Malta*, but met with very bad Weather by the way. Finding that my Ship leak'd on all Sides, I did not dare to go towards the *Levant*. Captain *Trulet*, being then at *Malta*, undertook to convoy my two Merchant-men; and I promised to convoy to *Provence*, those he was to guard, which then lay at *Malta*.

Sails for  
*Provence*;  
oblig'd to  
return be-  
cause of the  
bad Weather

Careens his  
Ship.

After having refitted, as well as I could, I set Sail; and being got about forty Leagues at Sea, I met with such excessive bad Weather, that I was forced to sail back, when I was oblig'd to have my Ship carreen'd, which was open in several Places, so dreadfully it had been buffeted by the Storm. The Grand Master furnished me with all the Necessaries requisite, when I set Sail some Days after; and meeting always with contrary Winds, we had a very hard matter to reach *Toulon*.

A foppish  
Fryar  
comes on  
Board.

'Twas in this Voyage, that as I was one Day going to sail from *Leghorn* for *France*, a Fryar came on Board, wearing an Ear-ring, at which a large Pearl hung. Scarce had he set his Foot in the Ship, when addressing himself to such Sailors as came first in his way, he



1704

Re. he asked for the Captain, with a haughty and arrogant Air. I was just by him, when going up to him; *Are you,* says he, *the Captain?* Yes, says I, *I am he.* *What's your Name?* says he. *What's that to you?* says I; *my Name's nothing to the Affair: What's your Business?* *My Business,* says he, *is, that I'm to present you a Pass from Cardinal de Janson, who desires you to take me on board your Ship.* Hearing him say this, I took the Pass, and reading it; "All's very right (says I) except one thing, which is, that he does not take any Notice that the Fryar who was to give it me, was to wear an Ear-ring, and would assume all the Airs of a Fop; so that I must bid you march off as fast as you can, otherwise I'll throw you into the Sea." I spoke these last Words with so resolute an Air, that the Fryar being afraid lest I should make my Words good, went away in the utmost Confusion, and did not once open his Lips.

He drives  
the Fryar  
away.

Tho' this Circumstance seems of little Importance, yet I was very glad to mention it, purely to hint to those whom Providence has appointed to direct others, That if ever they deviate from that modest Deportment, which ought always to be inseparable from an

Reflection  
relating to  
the Clergy.

1704.

Is still prosecuted by his Mistress.

She is cast again.

The Count de Toulouse speaks to the First President very warmly, in favour of the Chevalier.

an Ecclesiastic, they will certainly appear ridiculous and contemptible to Persons of good Sense.

BUT to return to my Arrival at *Toulon*. Scarce was I got on Board, but I was oblig'd to go to *Aix*, where I was still to be Defendant in the long-winded Prosecution so often mention'd. My Mistress having been cast at *Toulon*, had appeal'd to the Parliament; and presented a Petition against me, but with as little Success as before, the Judges being Men of the greatest Wisdom and Integrity.

WHILST I was using all my Endeavours to prove the Malice of my Antagonist, the Count *de Toulouse*, who was at *Toulon*, set out for Court, and pass'd thro' *Aix*, where Mr. *Le Bret*, then First President, went and paid him his Compliments. I had had the Honour of making mine before, and had begg'd that Prince to speak to the First President in my Favour, with regard to the Prosecution. He indulg'd my Request with the utmost Candor, and went much farther in it than I could have flatter'd my self; after having said a thousand Particulars to my Advantage, he told him, that he look'd upon this Affair as his own; and concluded his Recommendation with these Words; *At least,*

good

good Monsieur the Intendant; I above all  
recommend to you, that there be no Mar-  
riage in the Case. 1704

BUT this was not all; for he also  
was pleas'd to procure me two Orders  
from Court, directed to the Parlia-  
ment; by the first they were order'd  
to dispatch it; and by the second were  
forbid to Nonsuit me, in case I was  
absent in the Service. I had wish'd  
for the latter Order so much the more  
earnestly, that as I possibly might be  
forced to go to Sea, at a time when I  
should be deeply engag'd in defending  
my self, I was afraid lest the Plaintiff  
should take Advantage of my Absence,  
and cast me before I should be al-  
low'd a hearing.

Two Orders  
from Court  
in his Fa-  
vour.

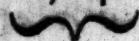
ONE would have concluded, that as  
Justice was on my Side, and as I had  
such powerful Protectors, the Prose-  
cution would soon have been ended;  
however, the Plaintiff prosecuted me  
with so much Violence, that tho' the  
Judges were very desirous of making  
an end, yet it was three Months first.  
At last, being tired out and confoun-  
ded by the many fresh Incidents that  
daily came to light, they confirm'd  
the Sentence which had been pronoun-  
ced at *Toulon*, and rejected the Plain-  
tiff's Plea, to the great Regret of all  
my Enemies, especially Mr. \* \* \* \*

The Prose-  
cution end-  
ed to his  
Satisfaction

who



1704.



A Letter  
written to  
his Preju-  
dice, but  
disregarded

who had been so imprudent, as to write to the First President against me.

THE Letter was given to this Magistrate by a Councillor of the Great Chamber, half an Hour before the Court pronounc'd Sentence. The President, who had made much greater Dispatch in the Affair, than I could have flatter'd my self with, took the Letter, and suspecting the Contents laid it, unopened, under one of the Arms of his Easy Chair; and at the same time said, *We shall see what the Business is, after Sentence is pronounc'd.*

'Tis given  
to him open

WHEN the Whole was ended, one of the Presidents gave it me open. The Person who had wrote it, express'd himself in such severe Terms, that it was impossible to read it without Indignation. However, I did not discover any, for I was so overjoy'd that Sentence was pronounced in my Favour, that nothing else was capable of affecting me. And notwithstanding that I had but bare Justice done me, yet the Pleasure to find my self got rid of a Prosecution which had given me so much Trouble; and the great Indulgence of the Court on this Occasion, permitted me only (as was observed) on one hand to be overjoy'd that the Prosecution was at an end; and on the

He disre-  
gards it.

other

other, to shew my Gratitude to the Judges, and the First President in particular. 1704.

The Chevalier's Gratitude towards the First President.

As it is impossible for me to acquit my self of the Obligations I owe this Magistrate, I embrace with Joy this Opportunity I have of publishing them, in order that the World may know, that as he did whatever lay in his Power to serve me on all Occasions; I entertain, and shall, 'till Death, the Remembrance thereof, which will be as dear to me, as the Favours themselves.

Commands the *Trident*. Sails to the *Levant*.

AFTER the Prosecution was ended, I returned to *Toulon*, where I receiv'd Orders to command the *Trident*; to cruize upon the Privateers, and secure the Trade; and as soon as my Ship was ready to put to Sea, I made for the *Levant*, where I had a Fleet to convoy.

Meets a *Venetian* Ship, which refuses to salute the Chevalier, who threatens him.

Going into the *Archipelago*, I spy'd off of *Cerigo*, an Island belonging to the *Venetians*, a large Ship, which I gave chase to, and which suffered her self to be pursued for some time. Being come within Call (for I followed her close) I asked who she belong'd to; Answer was made, *To St. Mark*. She was parted, I cannot tell why, from a Squadron which the *Proveditor-General* of the Sea commanded about forty Leagues from the Place where we were. I call'd out to the Captain, to salute the King's Flag,

1705.

Flag, but the *Venetian* answered, he was in his own Seas, and never saluted any Vessel.

UPON this Answer, I prepared to fight him, which he observed, and not caring to go so far, he asked who commanded the *French Ship*? 'Twas answer'd, *The Chevalier de Forbin*; hearing this, *Don't fire* (says he) *I'll salute the Chevalier de Forbin*. I answer'd, that he must take care what he said, and that he was to salute the King's Flag, which if he refus'd, I'd fire a whole Broad-side upon him. Finding by this Answer, that I was resolved not to spare him, he made no Reply, but saluted as usual.

He returns  
the Salute.

Sends to  
search his  
Ship.

THE manner in which this Captain spoke, had put me out of Humour, and to shew that I did not like his Raillery, I sent my Boat to search his Ship, and see whether he had any *Frenchmen* on Board; for according to several Treaties between *France* and *Venice*, the Republic is forbid to take any *Frenchmen* into their Service. They found Four-score and ten; upon which

Finds Nine-  
ty *French* on  
Board.

Orders them  
to be deli-  
ver'd up to  
him.

I ordered him to send them immediately on board my Ship, which he refusing to do, I sent again my Boat with Orders to tell him, that if he persisted in his Refusal, I would go on Board, and take him himself

This

This  
frai  
boat  
der  
con  
'twa  
him  
H  
them  
that  
an A  
terwa  
ing  
shewe  
der o  
attach  
much  
his C  
when  
the uti  
begg'  
that e  
was al  
diately  
boat,  
brough  
Board.  
Gun Sh  
n Boa  
THR  
ship of  
Crew,  
French.  
VOL



This second Menace made him afraid; so that he sent out his Long-boat, and one of his Officers, in order to treat with me, and endeavour to compound for part of the Men; but 'twas in vain, and I would not suffer him to keep back one.

1705.



HOWEVER, I was desirous of getting them without Blows; and therefore, that I might not be forc'd to commit an Act of Hostility, which might afterwards bring me into Trouble; finding I had to deal with a Coward, I shewed his Officer the State and Order of my Ship, which was ready to attack him. This terrified him so much, that, agreeable to the Genius of his Countrymen, who are very supple when resolutely threat'ned, he made the utmost Submission; kiss'd my Hand, begg'd me not to fire, and assur'd me that every thing should be done. This was all I wanted; whereupon I immediately sent out my Long-boat and Ship-boat, which in two or three times brought the *Ninety Frenchmen* on Board. This *Venetian* was a Seventy-Gun Ship, and had three hundred Men on Board.

Has them  
all brought  
on Board.

THREE Days after, I met with a Ship of the same Number of Guns and Crew, out of which I also took Forty *French*. This exasperated the *Vene-*

The *Vene-*  
tians exas-  
perated.

VOL. II.

I

tians

1705.

The General of the *Gulph* threatens him.

tians again, but I valued their Anger as little as I had done before. The General of the *Gulph*, hearing how I had treated two Men of War of his Squadron, threatned very hard, and vow'd to be reveng'd; however, I disregarded his Menaces, and continued to cruize, but he did not once appear all the time I staid in those Parts.

At last, I sail'd on, and cast Anchor before *Smyrna*, and being about fifteen Leagues from that City, my Ship shook in a violent manner in the Night.

An Earthquake shakes their Ship violently, tho' in above thirty Fathom Water.

Tho' 'twas a stark Calm, yet the Jirk was so forcible, that my Windows rattled so that it wak'd me. Upon my enquiring what was the matter I was told, 'twas an Earthquake, upon which I got up, thinking it scarce possible for a Ship that was at such distance from the Land, and in above thirty fathom deep, cou'd be shaken in that violent manner. But 'twas certainly so, and I heard the next Day by a Vessel which came from *Smyrna*, that the Earthquake had been so terrible there, that all the Inhabitants had left their Houses, and fled into the Fields.

Chases a sixty-Gun Dutch Ship.

A few Days after, I gave Chase to a Dutch Ship richly laden. 'Twas a sixty-Gun Ship, and being closely pur-

ful  
bel  
I  
for  
each  
him  
betw  
ver,  
prize  
the  
ney,  
Wor  
migh  
this a  
nity  
to cru  
Island  
Sude.  
'T  
s the  
his M  
ect to  
in the  
lands  
he res  
visite  
mande  
llo.  
ense,  
le rece  
lity,  
chiefly  
ulph.  
fue

sued, she fled for shelter to a Fortress belonging to the Grand Signior. 1705.

I offer'd the Governor of the Fort forty Purfes, of five hundred Crowns each, to stand neuter, and not concern himself in this Battle, as it would be between two Christian Ships. However, he refus'd my Offer, which surprized me very much, especially as the *Turks* are well known to love Money, as much as any People in the World; but possibly the *Dutchman* might have made him larger Offers. Be this as it will, as I had no Opportunity of attacking the Ship, I return'd to cruize, and cast Anchor in the Island of *Candia*, in the Road of *la Sude*.

Offers the Governour of a *Turkish* Port, 20000 Crowns to stand Neuter.

Sa's to *Candia*.

'Tis subject to the *Venetians*, and is the only Place they are Masters of in this Island which has been so long subject to them. They have a Fortress in the middle of the Bay, which stands by it self, and the *Turks* possess the rest. The Day after my Arrival, I visited the noble *Venetian* who commanded the Place, nam'd Signior *Marcello*. He was a Man of excellent sense, and spoke very good *French*. He received me with the highest Civility, and our Conversation turn'd chiefly on my Expedition in the *Gulph*. He said, that the *Venetians*

The *Venetian* Governour of a Fort there, receives him handsomely.



1705.



The Govern-  
ment calls  
the Cap-  
tains of the  
two Venetian  
Ships, who  
had parted  
with some  
of their  
Crew, Ignor-  
ant Cow-  
ardly  
Wretches.

had no reason to complain of me; that indeed I had done several things which must naturally displease the Republic; but then, that I was not to be blam'd for it, since what I had done was purely in compliance with my Orders, and to serve my King.

WE afterwards spoke of the two large Ships which had suffer'd part of their Crew to be taken out of them;

“ As for those, says he, the Com-  
manders are a couple of ignorant,  
“ cowardly Fellows. Ignorant, because  
“ they did not know that the Ships of  
“ the Republic are oblig'd to salute  
“ those of the King of *France*,  
“ and that 'tis stipulated by Treaties  
“ with that Crown, that we are not  
“ to keep any *French* in our Service,  
“ tho' we have a great number in our  
“ Garrisons: then they are Cowards  
“ for suffering their Men to be taken  
“ from them without making any Re-  
“ sistance.

“ THE moment they saw the *French*  
“ Flag, they ought to have saluted  
“ without being requir'd to do it  
“ They should also have hid all their  
“ *French*, and never own'd they had  
“ any on Board. Had they done this  
“ they would not have been ignom-  
“ inously forc'd to salute, after having  
“ refus'd to do it; and what is worse

“ the

1705.

The noble Venetian tells him the brave part of his Countrymen esteem'd the Chevalier, but did not fear him.

“ they would not have suffer'd the In-  
 “ sult of having their Men taken from  
 “ them, and not once make any Resi-  
 “ stance. Had it been me, says he, I  
 “ should have fought to the last, rather  
 “ than put up such an Affront; for let  
 “ me tell you, Sir, the Cowardly part of  
 “ my Countrymen fear you; but as  
 “ for the Brave, they esteem you, but  
 “ fear you not.” These were judicious  
 Expressions; but I should have been  
 glad to have met this Governor upon  
 the Seas.

From the *Sude* I sail'd for *France*,  
 in order to careen my Ships which  
 wanted it much. Passing by *Malta*, I  
 met a Fleet of Merchant-men, which  
 I undertook to Convoy. We having  
 still contrary Winds, I was oblig'd to  
 cast Anchor before *Cagliari*, where I  
 again visited the Archbishop my good  
 Friend, who embrac'd me tenderly,  
 and presented me six fine Dapple-grey  
 Horses, which I cou'd not take on  
 Board then, but fetch'd them away  
 some time after.

Sails for France.

The Arch-  
 bishop (of  
*Cagliari*) pre-  
 sents him  
 with six  
 fine Horses.

DURING my stay in the Island of  
*Cagliari*, the *French* Consul came to  
 me, and complain'd that the Vice-roy,  
 notwithstanding the Orders of his Ca-  
 tholic Majesty, still continued to in-  
 fest our Ships, upon Pretence of  
 searching them.

1705.

The French  
Consul  
complains  
to the Che-  
valier, a-  
bout an  
Imposition  
of the  
Vice-roy,  
viz. that all  
Vessels  
should be  
searched.

THIS pretended Right of search-  
ing, (which in Fact, was set on foot  
merely to force all Ships which should  
load or unload in the Harbour, to pay  
Contribution) had been carried to  
those lengths, by the Avarice of the  
*Spaniards*, that it was become intolerable.  
The handle which had been made use  
of for introducing it, was to remedy  
certain Abuses, and to take proper  
Precautions, for preserving the Goods  
on board the Ships. But it had af-  
terwards been so abus'd, and the va-  
rious Regulations had been multiply'd  
in such a manner, that tho' the  
strictest Care were us'd, yet it was im-  
possible not to be wanting in some  
Particulars; and when this happen'd,  
a Fine was always laid.

IN short, matters had been carried  
so far, that the Vice-roy was not a-  
shamed to publish an Order a little  
while before; by which, among other  
Articles, it was enjoyn'd, that all Ships  
should be oblig'd to have Cats on Board,  
upon pretence that the Rats might  
damage the Goods with which they  
were loaded.

BESIDES the Ignominy of being  
search'd, 'twas also, as I have ob-  
serv'd, of prodigious Prejudice to  
Trade. This the *French* complain'd  
of, and his Catholic Majesty gave  
Orders



Orders for their being suppress'd; but this being a loss to the Vice-roy, he defer'd publishing these Orders, and putting them in Execution; and this was the subject of the Consul's Complaint.

1705.

UPON this I waited on the Vice-roy, when I desir'd him not to delay any longer putting in Execution the Orders he had received; and to suppress an Impost which had been so long complain'd of: He answer'd after the *Spanish* manner, *Vedremos*, or *we shall see*.

Waits on the Vice-roy, and desires him to remit the Impost.

THIS Answer not being satisfactory, I besought his Excellency to consider that I was oblig'd by my Employment, to give the Court an Account of whatever I found interfer'd with the Interest of the King and the Nation; that I flatter'd my self he would have regard to my Solicitations, and hop'd he'd settle Matters on such a foot before I set sail, that I should not be oblig'd to make a Report disadvantageous to his Excellency. Finding by the manner in which I spoke to him, that I was resolv'd not to spare him, he publish'd the King's Orders that very Day, and the Search was abolish'd.

His Speech.

His Request is at last granted. The Impost suppress'd.

FROM *Cagliari* I return'd to *Toulon*, where I careen'd, and setting sail, I convoy'd a Fleet of Merchant-men,

Convoys a Fleet to the Levant.

1705.

Is at *Malta*.Antipathy  
between  
Pigeons  
and Crows.

bound for the *Levant*. We cast Anchor before *Malta*, and continued there two Days.

IN this Interval, I had an opportunity of discovering the Antipathy that is between certain Creatures. I had kept eighteen Months on board, six pair of Pigeons, of a very good kind, and excellent Breeders. They were so us'd to the Ship, that neither the careening of her, the noise of the Cannon, or the Approach of several other Ships, could drive them away. During my stay at *Toulon*, a young Raven had been presented to me, which I took on Board, and, as soon as it was able, went and flew about the Pigeons Nests. But this was enough to make them leave me; for one Afternoon my twelve Pigeons, as tho' they had agreed upon a Rendezvous, went and perched upon the Mizzen-Yard; when they all flew away together, tho' they all had either Eggs or Young ones, and were above forty Leagues from Land.

Has three  
Months  
leave to do  
his own  
Business.

Is appointed  
to Command  
the  
*Dunkirk*  
Squadron.

HAVING ended my Expedition, I return'd to *Toulon*, where I desir'd leave to go upon my own Business for three Months, which was granted me.

SCARCE was I repos'd after my Fatigues, when the Minister told me, that

that  
Kin  
Dun  
gave  
plain  
grea  
gave  
the  
of it  
M  
lity,  
and  
much  
dulg  
he ga  
whic  
in or  
the e  
stead  
me o  
T  
I ma  
woul  
had b  
turn f  
Gulph  
concil  
him,  
Some a  
I w  
see wh  
and n  
my Sh  
that

1705.



that by a particular Letter from the King, I was order'd to command the *Dunkirk Squadron*. This News which gave me the highest Satisfaction, as it plainly show'd the Court had now a greater Regard for me! than before, gave me some Uneasiness, because of the Manner in which I was inform'd of it.

Mr. *de Ponchartrain* had this ill Quality, that he did all things by halves, and by that Conduct lessen'd very much the Merit of the Favours he indulg'd. On this occasion, for instance, he gave me a considerable Commission, which oblig'd me go to Court; and in order that he might not be put to the expence of the Voyage, he, instead of dispatching an Order, sent me only a Letter.

An ill Quality of Mr. *de Ponchartrain*.

THIS Procedure vex'd me, and if I may be so frank, a little matter would have set me against him, after I had been treated so ill, upon my return from the two Expeditions in the *Gulph*; for notwithstanding our Reconciliation, I had not yet forgiven him, for receiving me in so unhand-some a manner.

Does not love the Minister.

I waited some Days, purposely to see whether my Order wou'd come, and not hearing of any, I unrigg'd my Ship, and upon the bare Receipt

Lays up his Ship. Goes to Court,



1706.

of this Letter, I set out for Court, where I arriv'd the beginning of the Year 1706.

He accuses  
the Mini-  
ster of A-  
varice to  
his Face,

THE Minister upon my Arrival, told me I had delay'd coming too long. " Not too long, says I; you " gave me leave to retire for three " Months, and only fix Weeks of the " time are elaps'd. That's very true, " says the Minister, but I wrote to " you since to come; I know it, says " I, and if I did not comply sooner " with your Orders, you must blame " only your Avarice for it; when Of- " ficers are sent for, an Order should be " dispatch'd and not a bare Letter; " but then had you sent the former, " you must have defray'd the Expens- " ces of my Journey, and that you " was not willing to do.

Who smiles,  
and is very  
Civil.

A'r these Words the Minister smil'd, and tho' I had made a sharp sort of Answer, yet he was vastly polite. I gave him many Thanks for the Honour he did me; and after assuring him, that I'd do all that lay in my Power, to answer his Expectations, I desir'd him to communicate his Intentions to me.

The Mini-  
ster tells  
him a par-  
ticular Fa-  
vour he had  
indulged  
him.

HE told me, that his Majesty in bestowing this Command upon me had preferr'd me before several older Officers who had sollicitated for that

Post

Post  
recei  
Gran  
as Pa  
glad  
A  
was  
that  
Favor  
neath  
ing  
merel  
ney,  
nour  
strain  
Hope  
to en  
had a  
fully.

TH  
was  
Dispo  
was ne  
an op  
vice t  
Squad  
was th  
entrust  
it was

I an  
two G  
and S.  
selves

Post; that before I could have been receiv'd in it, several petty Favours or Grants must have been obtain'd, such as Pensions, &c. but that he was very glad to smoothe the Way for me.

1705.



At these Words, *petty Favours*, I was vex'd, and thereupon answer'd that I had long look'd upon the small Favours he mention'd to me, as beneath me; that my Ambition of serving his Majesty was not prompted merely for the sake of getting Money, but that I serv'd chiefly for Honour; and continuing in the same strain, I besought him to give me such Hopes as were fit for a Gentleman to entertain, who had Courage, and had always serv'd his Sovereign faithfully.

The Chevalier dis- regards it,

THE Minister answer'd, that he was overjoy'd to see me in such a Disposition of Mind, and that there was nothing he so earnestly wish'd, as an opportunity to do me all the Service that lay in his Power; that the Squadron I was going to command, was the only one on foot, and that in entrusting me with it, he assur'd me it was his favourite Squadron.

The Minister professes a vast Kindness,

I answer'd, that as I was to succeed two Gentlemen, *viz.* Messieurs *Bart.*, and *S. Paul*, who had signaliz'd themselves by a thousand Gallant Actions,

it

1706. it wou'd be a very difficult matter to equal them, especially in the Expedition I was now to be sent upon; that I ardently wish'd it might be in my Power to distinguish my self by some brave Exploit; but in order to do this, it would be proper for the Court to leave me to act as I thought proper; and concluded with representing to him, that tho' Ministers be never so able, and how sagacious soever the Instructions they give the Officers may be, 'tis a very difficult matter to do any thing to the purpose, if they are literally follow'd.

Desires to act as he thinks proper, and not be so much restrained.

His Reasons.

That a Minister cannot tell so well as an Officer, because of several things that may intervene,

You your self, Sir, says I, are very sensible that nothing is so fortuitous as the Sea. The Instructions you'll put into my Hands, will be fix'd to Capes and Latitudes, as you shall have settled them in your Offices. In case I must be oblig'd to obey what is prescribed, and not be allow'd to act as I shall think proper according to Circumstances, I then shall lose the Opportunity; so that the Expedition will be rendred ineffectual, by my being forc'd to obey implicitly my Instructions; methinks it would be better to leave me at my Liberty; for then, as I may act according to the Advices I receive; and as I have the greatest Inclination to exert my self

to



1706.

to the utmost of my Power, a thousand to one but I shall atchieve some Exploit, that may do some Honour to the Navy.

THE Minister told me I was very bold in thus venturing to take the Events upon my self; Sir, says I, I understand what I'm going about, and I plainly perceive I shan't run any great Hazard. The Harbour of *Dunkirk* stands in the midst of our Enemies, so that I shall not fail of Opportunities; and in case I'm allow'd to act as I please, I'll do every thing so seasonably, that I may possibly annoy the Enemy; but in one word, if I don't signalize my self, I'll give you leave to dismiss me as a Braggadocio, and never confide in me more. The Minister answer'd, he himself cou'd not determine any thing upon that Point, but that it must be mention'd to the King.

Promises to exert himself.

'Tis mention'd to the King.

HIS Majesty having been inform'd of all I had said to the Minister, answer'd, *the Chevalier de Forbin is in the right, we must trust him, and let him act as he pleases.*

His Majesty's Answer,

SOME Days after, being in Conversation with Mr. *de Ponchartrain*, I perceiv'd he endeavour'd to give me to understand, that since I was going to

1706. to be at the Head of a Squadron, it might be proper for me to settle my Expences in such a manner as might do honour to my Post. With all my Heart, says I, provided you supply me with Money for that purpose. The Minister answer'd, that he was very sensible, I did not want Money; that I had a handsome Fortune; that I cou'd afford to spend without doing my self any Prejudice, as well, and much better, than many others; and that tho' I were to employ some Monies this way, it wou'd be impossible for me to lay it out to a better purpose.

The Minister advises the Chevalier to make a figure at his own Expence.

He answers that he'll keep his Money for old Age.

SIR, says I, the Labourer is worthy of his Hire; if I have amass'd some Wealth, 'twas purely by my Industry; for which reason, I'm resolv'd to husband it with care, in order to support me in my old Age, and to have a Competency, in case I should lose my Limbs, and be incapable of serving.

BUT if this happens, replied the Minister, his Majesty will take care of you. " I'm firmly persuaded he will," says I; however, all things duly consider'd, methinks 'tis better for a Man to have something he may call his own. One may then wait for " Court-

" C  
" an  
" do  
" it  
A  
went  
Whi  
desire  
tion  
direc  
lour,  
" ha  
' D  
" a  
" ow  
" H  
" his  
" say  
" do  
" So  
At h  
upon  
ing,  
smilin  
I c  
Paris  
leave  
at my  
that t  
afterv  
him;  
the I  
Amer

1706.



“ Court-Favours with less Uneasiness;  
 “ and in case they should never be in-  
 “ dulg’d, a Man is not so hard put to  
 “ it.

AFTER our Conversation, we  
 went and din’d with the Chancellour.  
 While we were at Table, I was very  
 desirous to introduce the Conversa-  
 tion I had had with the Minister; when  
 directing my self to the Chancel-  
 lour, “ My Lord, says I, your Son  
 “ has given me Orders to go for  
 ‘ *Dunkirk*, and advises me to make  
 “ a handsome Figure there at my  
 “ own Expence, purposely to do  
 “ Honour to the Navy; D’ye think  
 “ his Advice right? In no manner,  
 “ says the Chancellour, you cou’dnt  
 “ do a more silly thing, and my  
 “ Son’s Counsel is good for nothing.”  
 At his saying these Words I look’d  
 upon the Minister who fell a laugh-  
 ing, and indeed I cou’d not forbear  
 smiling my self.

I continued some Days longer in  
*Paris*, after which I went to take  
 leave of the King. I took the Liberty,  
 at my going away, to tell his Majesty,  
 that the *Dunkirk* Squadron shou’d not  
 afterwards be of any Expence to  
 him; and I presum’d to assure him,  
 the Enemy should make him ample  
 Amends for it. Upon my leaving the  
 King,

He waits  
 upon the  
 King.

His Speech,



1706.

The Mini-  
ster's Com-  
pliment.

Arrives at  
Dunkirk.

No Stores  
to be had  
there.

His diffi-  
culties upon  
these occa-  
sions,

The Squa-  
dron com-  
pletely E-  
quipp'd.

King, I went into the Minister's Ca-  
binet, who said to me at my taking  
leave, *Mr. de Forbin you are very happy,*  
*for there's no Man in France, but you*  
*and Monsieur de Turenne, have been*  
*allowed to act at discretion.*

UPON my Arrival at *Dunkirk*, I  
found his Majesty's Store-houses  
were in inexpressible Disorder; and  
absolutely unfurnish'd with every  
thing necessary for the Equipment of  
a Fleet. The Sails were all torn; all  
the Arms lay in Confusion; most of  
the Cutlasses had no Scabbards, and  
had no Edge; and the Powder was  
sad stuff.

HOWEVER, my Squadron was to  
consist of eight Men of War, which  
were to be immediately equipp'd. I  
had a thousand disputes with the In-  
tendant, the Comptroller, and the  
Master of the Stores; and had the  
greatest difficulty to get my Squadron  
equipp'd. I began by separating the  
Weapons; had all the Muskets made  
of an equal bore; such of the Cut-  
lasses as were for our purpose were  
laid apart; and I purchas'd new ones to  
make up our Compliment, and also  
bought fresh Powder. As for the  
Sails, I desir'd the *Chevalier de Lan-*  
*geron*, Commander of the Gallies, to  
permit all the Slaves to work, which

he

he co  
mann  
all I

I N  
the C  
that

Comp  
the N  
let h

Fraud  
I le

flush'd  
the C  
good

pen.  
I had

ginnin  
after r  
an En

of fo  
out of  
Conve

and tv  
I M  
pare e

Enem  
that w

all the  
came  
their

the F  
the M  
could.

1706.

he consented to in the most handsome manner, so that in a little time I had all I wanted.

INSTEAD of taking in Beer for the Crew, as is usual, I had Wine for that purpose; but the Intendant and Comptroller complain'd about it, to the Minister. I justified my self, and let him into a great many of their Frauds. At last I set sail.

Takes in Wine for the Crew.

Sets sail,

I left the Harbour, with my Heart flush'd with the Promises I had made the Court, and fully resolv'd to be as good as my Word, let what would happen. I was not long out at Sea, but I had an opportunity to make a beginning. I met, off *Ostend*, two Days after my sailing out of the Harbour, an *English* Fleet consisting of upwards of forty Vessels, which were come out of the *Dutch* Ports; and were Convoyed by a large Man of War, and two Frigats.

Meets a Fleet of *English* Merchant-men.

IMMEDIATELY I began to prepare every thing for an Attack. The Enemy knowing by our working, that we were going upon them, made all the Sail they cou'd. However I came up with them, and took ten of their Vessels richly laden. The rest of the Fleet, the two Frigates, and the Man of War, made off as they could. The next Day I sent my

Takes ten of them.

The rest fly.

Sends the Prizes to *Dunkirk*.

1706. Prizes to *Dunkirk*, under a strong  
 Convoy, and continued my Course.

Meets a  
*Dutch*  
 Squadron.  
 Forced to  
 fly.

A Week after, being off the *Texel*,  
 I prepared to attack a *Dutch* Fleet,  
 Convoy'd by four Men of War, when  
 I was prevented by a Squadron of  
 fifteen Ships, among which were a  
 Vice, and Rear-Admiral, who chas'd  
 us. 'Twas to no purpose to wait for  
 'em, whereupon I made all the sail  
 cou'd, and got off. In my way,  
 met some Merchant-men, and burnt  
 'em.

Burns some  
 Vessels.

Keeps the  
*English*  
 Fleet, that  
 was to sail  
 for *Russia*,  
 in.

FROM the *Texel* I cruis'd on the  
*English* Coasts, and oblig'd the Fleet  
 that was going for *Muscovy*, to re-  
 turn into the Harbour, where  
 block'd 'em up so long, that they  
 could not make their Voyage that  
 Year, the Season being too far ad-  
 vanc'd. During my stay off these  
 Coasts, I burnt fifty *Dutch* Barks, that  
 were fishing for Herring; and after-  
 wards sail'd towards *Norway*, when  
 I entred a *Danish* Harbour in order to  
 take in Water and careen.

Burns fifty  
*Dutch* Fi-  
 shermen.  
 Sails to  
*Denmark*.

The Gover-  
 nour sends  
 him a disa-  
 greeable  
 Compli-  
 ment.

THE Day after my Arrival, the  
 Governour of the Province sent me  
 such a Compliment as displeas'd me  
 very much; which was, that in case  
 my Squadron was appointed to con-  
 voy Merchant-men, I might continue  
 there as long as I pleas'd; but that

we



we were Privateers, or Men of War, I must leave the Port immediately.

1706.

I was so much the more surprized at this kind of Order, as the Person who sent it, had neither Ships nor Troops sufficient in the Harbour, to force me out of it, in case I refus'd to go. There were only a few inconsiderable Vessels, and some weak Houses built on the Sea-side, near which were two or three little blind Alehouses.

The Harbour in a poor Condition.

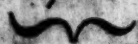
I was at first for sending an Answer, in a Style suitable to the Strength of my Squadron; however, that I might not carry things to Extremes, nor give the Court any room to make the least Reproaches, I only said to the Officer, who brought the Message from the Governour, that the Squadron being order'd to the King; that we were to come into the Port only to take in some Refreshments; that without Offence to his *Danish* Majesty, we would take in Bread and Water, after which we would set sail whenever we thought proper.

The Chevalier's haughty Answer.

AFTER making this Answer, I gave the Officer Refreshments, who drank so heartily that he was fuddled. I kept him a Week on Board, the time I staid in the Port, during which he was quite drunk; I having let People talk about him who made him tipple lustily.

Fuddles the Officer, and keeps him a Week on Board.

1706.



Fifteen  
Men of  
War in  
search of  
him.

Takes a  
Dutch Ship  
worth  
120000  
Crowns;  
and two  
other rich  
Prizes.

He flies  
from the  
English  
Men of  
War.

lustily. At last, being ready to set  
sail, I sent the drunken Wretch ashore,  
who had no notion of his having been  
so long a-board, where he had done  
nothing but drink and sleep.

DURING my stay in that Port  
News was brought me that a Squadron  
of fifteen Men of War was every where  
in search of me. As I was not strong  
enough to oppose 'em, I resolved to  
make off, and to go round Scotland  
and Ireland.

IN my way I met with a Ship be-  
longing to the Dutch Company, sail-  
ing for India. I took her almost with-  
out striking a stroke, and she had six-  
ty thousand Crowns on Board, and the  
rest of her Cargo was at least worth  
that Sum. Some Days after, sailing  
towards the Coast of France, I took  
two more Prizes of considerable Val-  
ue, which I carried to Brest, where  
both Vessels and Cargo were sold in  
the King's Name.

AFTER having careen'd, I return'd  
into the Channel, where I met with  
twelve English Men of War, which  
gain oblig'd me to fly, the match be-  
ing unequal. I crowded all the Sail I  
cou'd, and made for the North.

BEING got off Hamborough, I met  
another Dutch Fleet consisting of a  
battalion

about an hundred Sail, coming from  
*Norway*, and convoy'd by six Men  
 of War, each mounted with about  
 fifty pieces of Cannon. As soon as they  
 spy'd me, they drew up in a Line of  
 Battle. This opportunity of their at-  
 achieving an illustrious action was too  
 great to be let slip. Finding them thus  
 dispos'd, I prepar'd to attack them.

I had now but seven Ships, the  
 eighth being return'd to *Dunkirk* in  
 order to careen, which she wanted  
 very much. The *Sieurs Hanequin* and  
*Bart*, Son to the Captain of that  
 Name, both Captains in my Squa-  
 dron, and each commanding a Frigate;  
*Hanequins* of thirty Guns and *Bart* of  
 sixteen, were ordered to fall upon the  
 Ship that was in the Rear of the Ene-  
 my: My four other Ships were each  
 to attack one, and I reserv'd the *Dutch*  
 Commander for my self. The Com-  
 missary of the Fleet, who was on Board  
 my Ship on the King's part, was not  
 for fighting; but I was resolv'd upon't,  
 and notwithstanding his Opposition, I  
 commanded the Squadron to begin the  
 Attack, and follow me.

I had placed by my side a young  
 Midship-man, *D'Escalis* by Name, who  
 had been strongly recommended to me,  
 and of whom I took the utmost care.  
 I ordered him to keep close to me till  
 we

1706.

Prepares to  
 attack a  
*Dutch*  
 Fleet.

He has  
 now but se-  
 ven Ships.

Disposes  
 the Attack.

Begins the  
 Attack.



1706.

His Orders  
to a young  
Midship-  
man.

Attacks the  
Comman-  
der,

They  
Board her.

A dreadful  
slaughter.

The Mid-  
shipman  
kills the  
Captain,

we began the Attack; but that he must not fail, the moment he heard me say *Board her*, to jump the first Man into the Enemy's Ship; and that was the only means of his being soon made a Officer.

I immediately drove down upon the Enemy, who made a prodigious fire both with their Cannon and small Shot and being come up, I fir'd upon 'em in my turn; and poured in a shower of Musket-shot and Granadoes, which made such Execution, that they were soon forc'd to quit the Castles.

THE moment I perceiv'd the Disorder they were in, I cried out to my Men; *Come on, my Lads, Board 'em, Board 'em*, and to encourage 'em I advanc'd at their Head. *D'Escalis* who waited with Impatience for the Signal, leapt in first, Sword in Hand and was soon follow'd by a great number of Officers, Midship-men and Soldiers.

THEN a dreadful Slaughter was made on all sides. I lost a great many Men, but happily, the Havock did not continue long. A little after *D'Escalis* cried out to me from the Stern, and calling me by my Name *we are Victorious. I've killed the Captain* immediately my Men began to plunder.

1706.

The Ship  
plunder'd,They fall  
foul on one  
another,One of the  
Ships on  
Fire,He is in  
danger,

I was beginning to send the Prisoners on board my Ship, when the *Sieur de Tourouvre*, one of my Captains, who had not succeeded in his Attempt to board the Ship he was ordered to attack, came and run cross my Prow, and that of the Ship I had taken.

We were now all in so much the greater Danger, as the Wind blowing from the Stern, drove us upon *Tourouvre's* Ship, and hindred us from getting off, so that it was impossible for us to steer.

To increase the Confusion, the Vessel I grappled with, was suddenly on fire, but how I cannot tell. As the Wind blew very hard, the Ship was immediately in a Blaze. I endeavour'd to get off, when one of the Enemy's Ships came down upon me.

To oppose her, I immediately order'd all my Crew that remained on Board, to pass on the other Side of the Ship; for the greatest part were in the Enemy's Ship which was on fire, where they plundered on all Hands, without regarding the Danger we were all in. The Enemy, who seemed resolv'd to board me, after having fir'd all their Artillery, which kill'd some of my Men, sheer'd off, without making any further Attempt.

Tho'

1706.

Is like to be  
set on fire.

Tho' I was got clear from this Danger, I was still very much embarrassed; for the Flame blew up to such a Degree, that I run the risk either of being burnt, or at least of being shatter'd, when the Vessel should blow up. My only Refuge in this Perplexity, was to cut my Masts by the Board, which I was very loth to do; and before I came to that Extremity, was for getting off, by bearing down with all my Sail on *Tourouvre's* Ship.

His Ship damaged.

I succeeded, but then I fell into new Danger; for the two Ships hauled bulg'd with such Violence one against the other, that I lost my Rudder and six Ports, which *Tourouvre's* Stern carried off as she pass'd by me.

Is like to sink.

As the Sea was very tempestuous, six of my Port-Holes being opened, the Water came pouring into my Ship. To prevent my Sinking, I was going to make my Ship stoop, by weighing on that Side which was not damaged, when one of the Enemy's Ships which was coming forward to assist the Commander, by attacking me, prevented my doing this. I then was under Necessity of Fighting, or going to the Bottom. But I soon determin'd for I went towards the Enemy, in order

der  
self  
my  
nough  
take  
'T  
these  
I im  
preser  
The  
the E  
me, v  
wer'd  
ey of  
oluck  
ship v  
to fu  
Men b  
riking  
HAV  
mediate  
stopt  
en, v  
er;  
ag, as  
Capt  
t well  
Ship  
could  
hts, f  
d; an  
Crew  
do  
VOL.



der to board them, when directing my self to the rest of my Crew, *Courage, my Lads (says I) we are still strong enough; fear nothing, we shall certainly take her.*

1706.

Encourages his Men to board her, which they do.

'Tis not to be express'd how much these few Words rais'd their Courage. I immediately turned my Ship, and presented the weak Side to the Wind. The Moment I was come within reach, the Enemy fir'd all their Cannon upon me, which did me no Harm. I answer'd him with a Broadside, and a Volley of Small Shot, which was discharg'd so luckily, that I damaged the Enemy's Ship very much; and this threw them into such Confusion, that as I and my Men boarded them, they surrendered by striking their Flag.

They take the Ship,

HAVING thus taken the Ship, I immediately set about repairing my own. I stopt my Port-holes, which were still open, with Planks, and Linnen tarr'd over; and after having put up the Flag, as a Signal for rallying, I order'd Captain of my Squadron, who had so well seconded me, to go and moor the Ship I had now taken; but before he could get up with her, she sunk to the bottom, so dreadfully she had been shattered; and there was but one Man of the Crew sav'd, whom I took in.

One of his Ships sinks,

1706.



Gets off  
part of his  
Crew in the  
Ship on fire.

The Ship  
blows up.

Hannequin's  
Ship in dan-  
ger of Sink-  
ing.

Loses thirty  
Men.  
The Fight  
ended.

IN the midst of this Confusion, I was in great Pain for my Officers, and the greatest Part of my Crew, who were in the Ship that was burning *Tourouvre*, who was no less sensible of the Danger than my self, and saw the Ship was going to blow up, endeavour'd to get off. He happily did so, and took all my People in, who having at last perceived the Danger they were in, had left off plundering, and cried out for Succour in a most lamentable manner.

SCARCE was he got at some Distance from the Ship, when the Fire catch'd the Powder, the Ship blew up with the whole Crew, of whom not a Man was sav'd; except a small Number, whom *Tourouvre* had taken with my Men.

I now was told that *Hannequin* wanted Assistance, and had put out a Signal, to shew that his Frigate was going to sink to rights. He had fought bravely, and with *Bart*, had taken a Fifty-gun Ship. To extricate him from the Danger he was in, I sent the *Marquis de Lanquetoc*, who commanded one of the Ships, and ordered him to go after *Hannequin*, and save either the Ship, or at least the Crew. Thus the Fight ended, in which I lost the *Siege de Breme*, my second Captain, and the

Sold

Soldiers or Sailors. Mr. *Pallas's* Son, an Ensign, had his Arm shatter'd, and several of my Soldiers were wounded.

HAD every Man done his Duty, we should have taken the six Men of War, and a good Number of the Merchant-men; but in War, as in all other things, there will be a Difference in Men. The Merchant-men, taking Advantage of the Fight, crowd'd all their Sail, and being favour'd by Wind and Tide, they got off, together with three of the Men of War.

A little after, *Hannequin* having recatch'd, came and join'd the Squadron with *Bart*, bringing along their Prize, which was the only one of the three Ships I had taken, that I could bring into *Dunkirk*, whither I sail'd, after having refitted my Vessel as well as I could. I arriv'd with all my Squadron, ten Days after the Fight, and having unrigg'd, went to Court as I had been order'd.

THE Minister receiv'd me very graciously, and presented me to the King, who seem'd to be very well satisfied with my Services; I answer'd, that I was happy his Majesty was satisfied with the little I had done; but that having not Intelligence of the Enemy's Trade, I hoped to exert my self in such a manner next Campaign, as would be altogether

1706.

All the Merchant-men, and three Men of War get off.

Takes three Ships; brings but one into *Dunkirk*.

Unrigs his Ships. Comes to Court.

Is graciously received by the King.



1706. altogether to his Majesty's Satisfaction.

The King gave me to understand by a Smile, that my Answer had pleased him.

The Chevalier lodg'd in Cardinal de Janson's Palace.

Passes his Time very agreeably.

Wins much Money.

Revolves various Projects.

UPON my Arrival at *Versailles*, I met with Cardinal de *Janson*, who a little before had been honoured with the Dignity of Lord-High-Almoner of *France*. This Prelate had hired a large Palace in *Paris*, where he lodged all such of his Relations as were at Court. He embrac'd me, and gave me all the Testimonies possible of a sincere Friendship; and would not suffer me to lodge any where but in his Palace.

NEVER sure did I spend my Winter-Quarters more agreeably. The Cardinal treated me like a Prince; I was with my worthy old Friend the Archbishop of *Aix*, then Bishop of *Marseilles*. I went frequently to the Count de *Luc*'s. In fine, I play'd deep, and won a great deal of Money at the Dutchess of *Mantua*'s.

THE Reader will suppose, that in the midst of so many Delights, I must spend my time as agreeably, or perhaps more, than ever I did in my Life. However, my Pleasures did not keep me from thinking frequently on my next Campaign. I formed several Projects, which I considered in a Variety of Lights; and at last kept to the following, as most advantageous to the King

King, and most honourable for my Self; and this was, so to dispose of Matters, that I might take the *English*, *Dutch*, and *Hamburgh* Fleets, which sail every Year to *Archangel*, a City situated on the White Sea in *Muscovy*.

Resolves to take the *English*, *Dutch*, and *Hamburgh* Fleets.

I communicated my Design to Mr. *Pontchartrain*, who mentioned it to the Admiral, both of whom approv'd it; as did his Majesty, to whom it was communicated a few Days after. As these Seas are little known to the *French*, I desired the Minister to send for Pilots from *Holland* and *Hamburgh*, which he promis'd to do.

His Majesty and the Minister approve it.

EVERY thing being ready for the Campaign, I thought it was but Justice not to forget my self. I had long commanded a Ship, and desir'd to be rais'd to a better Post. I was of Opinion, that my long Services, every thing I had done in the *Gulph*, and my last Campaign, gave me some Hopes that the Court would do something in my Favour. However, no Notice was taken of any thing of that kind; and I plainly saw, that in case I did not make the first Overtures, I might still wait a long time. I therefore ventured to beg to be admitted to Audience, which his Majesty condescended to, and was graciously pleased to assure me, he'd take care of my Fortune.

Aspires to greater Honour.

Begs Audience of the King, and is graciously received.

1706.

Desires to  
be made a  
General-  
Officer.

SOME Days after, having an Opportunity, by chance, of speaking to the Minister in my own Favour, I did not let it slip. I represented to him, that I ought to be made a General-Officer; that the Command which the Court was pleased to bestow upon me, required it, as well as his Majesty's Service.

His Reasons  
for his Re-  
quest.

"You are sensible, Sir (says I) that when a Captain lays any Command upon his Brother Captain, the latter has always something to say against it, and does not think himself obliged to obey implicitly a Man, who in reality, can boast no other Superiority over him, but that which Seniority gives him. In case the Officers who are under him, fail in their Duty, he does not dare to reprove them; or in case he ventures to do it, 'tis with Fear, because the Person he lays his Orders upon is his Equal, a hundred to one but he returns a sharp Answer, but in the meantime Business goes on poorly, and the King is always ill served that in case his Majesty thinks I don't yet merit to be made a General-Officer, I beg the Favour of you to get some other Person nominated, and depend upon't, I'll obey him with Pleasure."

T



1706.

THE Minister, who never was my Friend, and endeavoured to elude my Pretensions in a polite way, protested he had, unasked, done all that lay in his Power to serve me on this Occasion. "I grant (says he) that you long since deserved the Favour you ask, but it has not yet laid in my Power to serve you; and the Representations which have been made to the King, were so strong, that they baffled all my Endeavours to raise you."

The Minister makes many Protections of Friendship,

I was not to be fobb'd off with this Answer. "If what you're pleas'd to tell me, be Matter of Fact, as I don't doubt but it is, I must confess my self, Sir, the most ungrateful Wretch upon the Face of the Earth; since I was always so firmly persuaded, that all Honours and Grants were in your Disposal, that I did not doubt, the sole Reason of my being never indulg'd any, was merely because you did not judge proper it should be so."

The Chevalier answers very bluntly

"I daily see People of my Acquaintance, that have rose prodigiously fast to military Honours; you know them as well as I, and you are not ignorant that had Justice been done them, they would have still been Ensigns. In case I am not advanced

Tells him he had hindered his Rise.

1706. "equally with them, What can I as-  
cribe this slow Progress to? And  
"how can I think it owing to any o-  
"ther Circumstance, but my ha-  
"ving had the Ill-fortune to displease  
"you?"

The Mini-  
ster gives  
him the  
greatest As-  
surances of  
his Friend-  
ship.

THE Minister answered me in the  
most obliging manner, that he desired  
me to think and believe the very Re-  
verse of what I now told him; that  
I should not be disheartned, and that  
he would again employ all his Endeavours to raise me.

Requests  
that *d'Esca-*  
*lis* may be  
made an  
Ensign.

THE Officers of my Squadron were  
to be rais'd in a few Days, upon which  
I returned to the Minister in order to  
beg him to give young *d'Escalis* an  
Ensign's Commission, he being Son to  
an old Friend of mine. At his Fa-  
ther's Request, I had got him the  
King's Letter, in the beginning of the  
last Campaign; and was very desirous  
of having him made an Officer, be-  
cause he deserved it, and was a very  
promising young Fellow.

WHEN I begg'd this Favour of the  
Minister, he answered, that we must  
have Patience. "'Tis (says he) but  
"six Months since you got the King's  
"Letter; and you're very sensible that  
"when even a Prince enters himself  
"on board in that Quality, he's never  
"rais'd under a Year." I answer'd

"That

1736.

“ That the Exploit which *d'Escalis* perform'd, by jumping first into the Enemy's Ship, was equivalent to six Years of Seniority at least.” The Minister reply'd, that he'd mention it.

I further desired him to remove three of my Captains who had not done their Duty in the Fight. He told me that could not be done, without occasioning heavy Complaints; and that such a Change would make too much Noise; that those I objected against, were strongly recommended at Court, and that he would not put them to that Disgrace; however, he promised to speak to them, and to make them behave better for the future.

Desires  
three of his  
Captains  
may be  
remov'd,  
but is re-  
fus'd.

THE Day the Promotions were made, I went and begg'd the Admiral to use his Interest for *d'Escalis*. This Prince promis'd to serve me to the utmost of his Power, and was as good as his Word; for the King being at first resolved not to do any thing in opposition to the Rules of the Navy; the Admiral gave so seasonable a Turn to my Reasons, by representing, that it was but just I should be indulged in what I requested meerly as a Favour, that his Majesty acquiesced with them, by saying, *That this was not too great a Favour for the Chevalier de Forbin, who had served so well that he shou'd not be refus'd.*

The Admi-  
ral employs  
his Endeavours for  
*d'Escalis*.

K S

THE



1706.

He is made  
Ensign.

THE Admiral at his coming out of the Council, said to me, "Your Midshipman is made an Ensign; he met with some Rubs in his Way, but they are all got over." I thank'd the Prince, and prepar'd to set out as soon as possible.

Asks the  
Minister  
whether he  
may cruize  
in the *Danish*  
Ports,  
who advi-  
ses him  
to it.

Two Days before my setting out, I ask'd the Minister, whether he would think proper of my taking Prizes in the Ports of *Denmark*, in case I met with an Opportunity for so doing. He answer'd, that I should by all means, and that the Court would be very well pleas'd for my so doing. The secret Misunderstanding that was between the Courts of *France* and *Denmark*, gave me an Opportunity of asking him this Question, but I did not require the Order in writing, thinking the Minister's Word sufficient; however, I had like to have paid for it; and for executing what he had approv'd, because I had nothing under his Hand by which I could justify myself.

Goes to  
*Beauvais*  
with Car-  
dinal de  
*Janson*.

As I was taking leave of Cardinal de *Janson*, "Cousin, says he to me, "since the King has given me leave to visit my Diocese, I'll set out a Week sooner; will take you to *Beauvais* with me, which lies in your way; and will get the Minister

" to

"to let you spend a few Days with  
"me." He obtain'd Leave, when tak-  
ing Coach next Day, we got in two  
Days to *Beauvais*.

1766.

OUR Conversation at our first set-  
ting out, turn'd entirely upon agree-  
able Trifles; but a little after, grow-  
ing more serious, we fell insensibly to  
talk of the little Stress that is to be  
laid on Court Promises. The Cardi-  
nal had many Things to say on this  
Head, his long Experience having  
taught him a thousand things.

Their Con-  
versation  
by the way.

I let him run on upon this Topic as  
long as he thought fit; when, "My  
"Lord, says I, methinks you are very  
"much in the right: I, tho' a Tarr, and  
"consequently little acquainted with  
"the Arts which are practis'd in  
"Courts, yet always made it a  
"Maxim, not to trust the Outside,  
"and bare Promises of those Gentle-  
"men too much; but give me leave  
"to tell you, that tho' I had been  
"never so credulous on that Head;  
"yet the Step I saw you take, not  
"two Days ago, would have more  
"than undeceiv'd me. How! replied  
"the Cardinal, astonish'd; What have  
"you observ'd? 'Tis this, says I.

Discourse  
on the In-  
sincerity of  
Courtiers.

"I was Yesterday in your Closet,  
"when you was told that a Man  
"wanted to speak with you, whom I  
"don't

1706. “ don’t know. Scarce had the Ser-  
 vant told you his Name, when you  
 “ assum’d a very crabbed Air, upon  
 “ which I offer’d to leave the Room,  
 “ but you would not let me. The  
 “ Gentleman came in, when imme-  
 “ diately you smoothed your Brow,  
 “ ran to embrace him, as tho’ he had  
 “ been one of your best Friends; and  
 “ after making him a thousand Offers  
 “ of serving him, and as many Prote-  
 “ stations of Friendship, you waited  
 “ upon him to the middle of the Hall  
 “ with the utmost Affability and Com-  
 “ plaisance.

The Cardi-  
 nal ex-  
 claims a-  
 gainst  
 them, and  
 is himself  
 guilty.

THE Cardinal, who recollected this  
 Incident, and was sensible he had play’d  
 the Courtier on this Occasion, laugh’d  
 till he cry’d; “ What could I do?  
 “ says he. That Gentleman teizes my  
 “ Heart out every Day, so that I was  
 “ fore’d to be more than commonly  
 “ civil, in order to get rid of him.

Goes for  
 Dunkirk,

Equips his  
 Squadron.

I staid a Week at *Beauvais*, after  
 which I set out for *Dunkirk*, where I  
 equipp’d my Squadron, consisting of  
 eight Frigats and four long Barks, and  
 waited some time for the Pilots whom  
 I had been promis’d, but to no pur-  
 pose. The Minister wrote to inform  
 me, that he could not get any; and  
 that I might do as I judg’d proper,  
 for which reason I was oblig’d to  
 make

make  
 ly, I  
 would  
 as I  
 might  
 acquai  
 Scar  
 when  
 Privat  
 chant  
 Down  
 War,  
 media  
 Six fr  
 up, de  
 we cr  
 came  
 break  
 TH  
 wards  
 convo  
 Men c  
 y to  
 solv’d  
 fore di  
 TH  
 Cheva  
 Frig  
 Ship v  
 Guard  
 Vesin,  
 Vessels  
 ny ov



make shift without them. Accordingly, I set sail, supposing my Charts would do my Business, till such time as I might take some Vessels, which might furnish me with Pilots who were acquainted with those Seas.

1707.

Sets sail  
withone  
Pilots.

SCARCE was I got out of the Road, when I was inform'd by two *French* Privateers, that a Fleet of *English* Merchant-men were just sail'd out of the Downs, convoy'd by three Men of War, and had steer'd Westward. Immediately I resolv'd to follow them. Six small *French* Privateers who came up, desir'd to joyn me. Accordingly we crouded all the Sail possible, and came up with the Enemy by Day-break next Morning.

Receives  
Advice of  
a Fleet of  
*English*  
Merchant-  
men.

Comes up  
with them.

THEIR Fleet, which consisted of upwards of fourscore Sail, was indeed convoy'd by three seventy-eight Gun Men of War. I had wish'd so earnestly to come up with them, that I resolv'd not to let them escape, and therefore dispos'd the Attack as follows.

The Fleet  
of eighty  
odd Sail.

THE *Sieur de Roquesfeuille*, and the *Chevalier de Nangis*, each a Captain of Frigat, were order'd to attack the Ship which was in the Enemy's Rear-Guard. The *Sieurs de Hannequin* and *Yefin*, were each with their respective Vessels, to attack the Vant-Guard; and my own Ship, follow'd by that of

Order of  
the Battle,

Count

1707.

Count d'Ille were to fall upon the Commander.

FOR the Succour, in case it were necessary, I appointed the Sieurs *Tourouvre*, *Bart*, and the four long Barks; and as for the Privateers, they were order'd to attack the Merchant Men, the instant they perceiv'd we had any Advantage over the Enemy.

The Signal given.

The English kill several of his Men.

THE Signal being given, *Roquefeuille* who was to begin, was a little slow in the Attack, which *Tourouvre* perceiving, fell on, and charg'd the Enemy strongly with his Fire; but attempting to board, he grappled unluckily, so that he did but just pass by the Enemy, who pour'd in a whole Broad-side, which kill'd a great many brave Fellows on board his Ship.

An English Man of War taken.

*ROQUEFEUILLE* desirous of repairing his Remissness, and take Advantage of the Confusion of the English Vessels, made up afterwards, follow'd by the Chevalier *de Nangi*. They both fir'd their Cannon so luckily, that there was hardly one Shot but what did Execution. A Moment after they came up with the Vessel, attack'd and cut to pieces all who oppos'd them, and after having fought with great Obstinacy, and losing great many Men on both sides, they made themselves Master of the Vessel.

WHILS

WHILST they were thus fighting in the Rear-Guard, I was engag'd with the Commander, who had waited my coming with the utmost Resolution; I attack'd, when the Fire of the small Arms and Grenadoes which flew dreadfully on all Sides, was equally terrible. At that instant I perceiv'd I was posted near the Mouth of a Cannon which had already fir'd, I kill'd, by the opening of the Port-holes at three different Discharges, three Gunners, who were making haste to charge it again.

1707.

The Chevalier engag'd.

Three Gunners kill'd.

I spy'd also by the same Port-hole, a Man in grey Clothes, who, with his drawn Sword gave Orders to all about him. Not doubting but he was the Captain, I immediately fir'd my Piece at him, when I saw him fall. 'Twas indeed the Commander, as I learnt afterwards.

The Chevalier kills the Captain.

THE *English* being no longer able to resist the Grenadoes, began to quit their Posts. The Moment I perceiv'd it, I call'd out to my People to board them. *D'Alonne*, one of my Lieutenants, follow'd by two Mid-shipmen, and some Soldiers, were already got in the Enemy's Vessel, when I observ'd an *Englishman* going to run at him with a half Pike; and taking a Piece from one of my Soldiers, I shot the

The *English* leave their Posts.

One of the Chevalier's Lieutenants boards the Enemy.



1707.

Young  
d'Escalis  
kill'd.

They grap-  
ple.  
Half his  
Crew board  
the *Englisb*.  
They un-  
grapple.

The Cheva-  
lier's great  
Anxiety.

The *Englisb*  
yield.

the *Englisbman* dead, and by that means sav'd one of my Officer's Lives. But I was not so fortunate with regard to young *d'Escalis*, for he was kill'd with a Musket-Ball, as he was going to board the Enemy, with a Multitude of Soldiers.

HALF of my Crew had board'd the *Englisb* Ship, where a great Slaughter was made, when my Grapples were carried off by a Cannon Ball, so that my Ship loos'd her. The *Englisb* taking heart at this Accident fell upon my Men, who fought like Desperadoes, but were oppress'd with Numbers.

I was vex'd to the Soul to see them so abandon'd, without being able to assist them, for I was drove to the Leeward of her by the Tide; and to add to my Misfortune, I was abandon'd by the Ship that was to succour me. In this unhappy Situation, I thought that the only Refuge left, was, to spread all my Sails, and to tack about, in order to get to the Windward, and board them a second time.

As I was preparing to do this, the Enemy's Main-mast which I had shot ter'd, fell. A Moment after, *Hannegan* and *Tourouvre* being come up to second me, the *Englisbman* struck and yielded. These sent their Long-boat

on Board, to seize upon the Ship. 1707.

The first Man who came to 'em, was *d'Alonne*, cover'd with Blood and Wounds. He had defended himself so valiantly, and the *English* had so high an Idea of his Courage, that before they yielded, all the Officers had entrusted him with their Money and Jewels. He, and a Midship-man, of all the Men who had boarded the Ship, only surviv'd, and all the rest were cut to pieces.

A great Slaughter.

THE *Sieur Vefin*, who was to attack the Ship that lay in the Vanguard, was kill'd at the first Discharge. The Baron *d'Acy*, his second Captain, attempted to board, but in vain, for he could never grapple, and receiv'd a Wound which disabled him from fighting. The *English* Ship being got clear, made all the Sail possible, and went and run a-ground on the *British* Coasts, in a little Harbour where they were secure. Whilst we were engag'd, our Privateers took twenty two Merchant-Men, and all the rest got off.

The third *English* Man of War flies, and runs a-ground.

Twenty two Merchant-Men taken,

Arrives at *Dunkirk*.

THE next Day, which was the third of my Departure, I made for *Dunkirk*, where I arriv'd in the Evening with my Prizes. This had been a bloody Battle, and I had lost above half my Crew. My second Captain nam'd

1707.

The Chevalier slightly wounded.

Officers kill'd or wounded.

The Chevalier's Chaplain frighted to Death.

His Vow.

The King makes him Commo-dore.

nam'd *Villeblin*, and poor *d'Escalis* were kill'd, and *d'Alonne* and *De Tapes*, a Major, wounded. I myself had a slight Wound in my Hand, but had receiv'd above ten Balls in my Cloaths. Fortune is a great Article in fighting. *Tourouvre* and the Chevalier *de Nangis* lost six Officers. Captain *Vesin* was kill'd; the Baron *d'Acy*, second Captain, was wounded, and several Midship-men, and a great Number of Soldiers and Sailors, were either kill'd or wounded.

My Chaplain, who was a *Parisian*, and till then had never gone twenty Miles from the Place of his Birth, was so terrified at the Fight, that we could hardly recover him. The Noise of the Cannon, and the Sight of so many dead and wounded Men, had struck him to that degree, that begging me to discharge him upon our Arrival at *Dunkirk*, he vow'd and protested to me, that he would never go to Sea again, tho' the King would make him an Admiral.

I sent a Relation of the Whole to Court. The Chevalier *de Nangis* was appointed to carry the News of it to the King, who was so well pleas'd with it, that he immediately made me Com-modore. Here follows the Letter, which the Minister wrote on that

Subj

Subje  
of Ma  
Aix.

"  
" gre  
" the  
" chi  
" you  
" im  
" Di  
" lin  
" Ne  
" seil  
" ing  
" to  
" wr  
" A  
" Mini  
" form  
" Com  
" aside  
" had g  
" de Fo  
" the M  
" rier,  
" there  
" Diam  
" I too  
" diatel  
" I had  
" I m  
" Cour  
" the  
" Subj



Subject to Mr. du Luc, then Bishop of *Marfeilles*, and now Archbishop of *Aix*. 1707.

" You undoubtedly have heard the great, the shining Exploit which the Chevalier de *Forbin* has achiev'd; but I myself will inform you, that the King rewarded him immediately, by raising him to the Dignity of Commodore. I'm willing you should first spread the News thereof in the City of *Marfeilles*, and all *Provence*, well knowing the great Satisfaction it will be to you, which is the Reason of my writing to you.

The Minister's Letter.

A Cabinet Courier brought me the Minister's Letter, by which I was inform'd that the King had made me Commodore, and would have me lay aside the Title of Chevalier I till then had gone by, and assume that of Count de *Forbin*. I was too well pleas'd with the News, not to gratify the Courier, who had brought it me, and thereupon made him a Present of a Diamond Ring worth fifty *Louis*, which I took from my Finger, and immediately set about answering the Letters I had then receiv'd.

The King orders him to be call'd Count *Forbin*.

IN the Relation which I sent to Court, I had told the Minister that the Season was not so far advanc'd, but

1707.

The King  
orders the  
Count to  
make the  
Promo-  
tions.

but there might be room for my Pro-  
ject, which I should be in a Condition  
on to pursue, provided the Court  
would immediately fill up, by a speedy  
Promotion, the Vacancies which had  
been made in my Squadron. The Mini-  
ster answer'd, that the King would  
have me myself make the several Pro-  
motions; a Commission that embarrass'd  
me very much, for great Numbers mer-  
ited Rewards, and I had not so many  
Favours to bestow as would satisfy every  
Body.

I therefore wrote back to the Mini-  
ster, to represent to him, that it would  
be better the Court should make these  
Promotions, since were I to act on  
this Occasion, a thousand Complaints  
and Murmurs would be made; that  
to have all my Officers satisfied would  
be for the King's Interest; and that  
when the Court should have explain'd  
themselves on this Occasion, as no one  
would have any Complaints to make  
against me, I might answer such as  
should be dissatisfied, that the King  
would have it so.

Desires  
Lieutenant  
St. Honoring  
may be  
promoted.

AMONG the Officers who had been  
wounded, Lieutenant Saint *Honoring*  
had lost both his Arms and Legs. I  
thought myself oblig'd to inform the  
Court of his deplorable Condition.  
I did so, and desir'd that the Court

mand

mand of a Ship, *St. Lewis's Cross*, and the first Pension which fell, might be given him; and added, that they ran no great Risk in bestowing these Honours upon him, since that he certainly could not enjoy them long, it being scarce possible for him to survive his Wounds.

1707.

THE Minister answer'd, that with Regard to the filling up of the Vacancies, the King would absolutely have me nominate the Officers; and with respect to the Rewards which I had demanded in Favour of *St. Honorine*, I receiv'd for him not only the Command of a Ship and the Cross of *St. Lewis*, but also the strongest Assurances, that the first Pension which fell should be bestow'd on him.

The King will have the Chevalier nominate the Officers.

*St. Honorine* rewarded,

I ran with this News to poor *St. Honorine*, who notwithstanding the inexpressible Pain he felt, which he bore with a truly heroic Patience, seem'd nevertheless pleas'd at the Notice the Court had taken of him, and was most thankfully thankful for my interesting myself so warmly in his Favour without his once requesting it. He did not long enjoy the Rewards which he was thought to deserve, for he died the next Day, to the great Regret of all his Friends.

And dies,

THE



1707.

He fills up  
the Vacan-  
cies.

Acquaints  
the Mini-  
ster with  
his Pro-  
ceedings.

Sails for  
the White  
Sea.

Takes 7 or  
8 Vessels.

THE Minister absolutely refusing to fill up the Vacancies, and resolving to give me all the Trouble of it, I completed this Affair by unrigging the four long Barks, whose Officers and Crew I took, which added to a hundred Sailors whom the Chevalier *Langeron* sent me, tho' design'd for the Equipment of the Gallies; these, I say, fill'd up the several Vacancies made by the Dead and Wounded in my Squadron. 'Tis true indeed, that I hereby weaken'd myself considerably; however, I chose to have fewer Men, rather than that any Person should have room to murmur.

I acquainted the Minister with what I had done; and in order that those who had merited Reward, might meet with it; I sent him a List of them, by which he might bestow the Favours as he judg'd proper. Having thus concluded this Affair, as I had *Carte blanche*, and the Time pass'd away, I set sail without waiting for the Answer from Court, and made for the White Sea, pursuant to my Orders.

IN the beginning of my Course, I took seven or eight Vessels which burnt, they being of so little Value that it was not worth while to bring them along. The Squadron was now several times annoy'd by the foe

Wea

Weather. *Hannequin* lost his Mizen Mast by a sudden Flurry, and *Roquefeuille* came on Board, to acquaint me that his Ship leak'd in all Places.

1707.

The Squadron buffered the foul Weather.

FINDING they were not in a Condition to cruize, I had the seal'd Instructions which I had given them at their leaving *Dunkirk* return'd to me, and order'd them to go to the Harbour of *Gottemburg*, belonging to the King of *Sweden*, when they might rest, and from thence cruize where they should think the best Booty was to be found.

Sends away two of his Ships.

By their Departure, my Squadron was considerably weaken'd, these being two of my largest Ships, but notwithstanding this I pursued my Plan. On the Coast of *Muscovy* I took a long *Hamburg* Bark, which I equipp'd, and met with a Pilot in her who was of great Service to me.

Takes a *Hamburg* and a good Pilot.

BEING off the Island of *Kilduin*, I met about twenty Sail of *English* Merchant-men, who were going to *Muscovy*. I attack'd them, and took them all; fifteen of them I burnt; and the five remaining I reserv'd, because they were better than the rest, and the Landing of greater Value.

Takes twenty Sail of *English* Merchant-men.

THREE Days after, I met with the main Fleet convey'd by three Men of War.

War.

1707.

Meets the  
main Fleet.Takes but  
four Vessels.He takes  
four *English*  
in the Har-  
bour of  
*Kilduin*.Eighteen  
Merchant-  
Men burnt  
by the  
Fleet.

War. I fell upon it, and was in a fair way of taking several Vessels, when a very thick Fog arose on a sudden and made us lose Sight of one another. It lasted for three Days together. Such as are acquainted with these Seas, know that these Fogs are very common in those Parts. I took but four out of the great Multitude of Vessels I had seen.

VEX'D to lose my Aim, I sent out to discover, when I was told at the Return of my long Bark, that a great part of the Fleet were gone to the Harbour of the Island of *Kilduin*. This was the very Place appointed for the Rendezvous of my Squadron, and accordingly I enter'd it with only two Frigats which I had brought along with me, and left the rest a cruizing in those Parts. Here I met with only four *English* Merchant-men which I took; and the next Day, when the rest of my Squadron came up, I found they had burnt eighteen Merchant-men.

At my sailing from *Dunkirk*, I took a Vessel laden with Provisions for the Squadron. I now unloaded her, and the Provisions having been distributed among the Squadron, I freighted her with the most valuable Part of the Cargoes we had taken.

PEWTER

PE  
put at  
last.  
of Cl  
a great  
and ot  
that in  
worth u  
and L  
I wa  
could  
when  
fisher-  
board,  
ne and  
er; bu  
en'd to  
angua  
wites fi  
at the  
erjoy  
as surp  
habit t  
ost the  
us, wh  
orth I  
e *Russi*  
of gr  
THE  
a, and  
mselfe  
proach  
scovite  
VOL. I



PEWTER being the heaviest was put at the bottom, and serv'd for Ballast. The rest of the Cargo consisted of Cloths of all Colours, of Serges, a great Quantity of Indigo, Linnens and other Effects of great Value, so that in the whole, this Cargo was worth upwards of twelve hundred thousand Livres.

1707.

Whole Cargo taken  
worth upwards of  
1200000  
Livres.

I was still in the Harbour, whence I could not set sail for some Days, when my long Bark brought in a Fisher-boat with arm'd *Muscovites* on board, and as we did not understand one another, we wanted an Interpreter; but two *Ragusan* Sailors, who happened to be with us, understood their two Language. These simple, rustic *Muscovites* finding they were well us'd, and realizing that they were understood, were so only enjoy'd that they fell a dancing. I was surpriz'd to hear the *Ragusans* who inhabit the Coast of *Albania*, speak almost the same Language with the *Russians*, who live in the 72d Degree of North Latitude, whence I found that the *Russian* or *Sclavonian* Tongue must be of great Extent.

A Boat  
with *Muscovites* taken,

*Russian* and  
*Ragusan*  
Tongues  
almost the  
same.

THE *English* whose Ships I had taken, and who for fear of being taken themselves, abandon'd them at my approach, had insinuated to other *Muscovites* who were in the Harbour,

The *English*  
represent  
the *French*  
as *Cannibals*.

1707. where they were Fishing, that the *French* were a pack of barbarous Wretches, that fed upon nothing but human Flesh. These harmless People, prejudiced against us, from the ridiculous account which had been given of our Cruelty, were so terrified at our Approach, that they left their Fish and fled away. They come every Year above a hundred Leagues from the Coast, purposely to fish in Summer; and return home in the beginning of Winter, they not being able to spend it in this Island which is inexpressibly cold.

Description  
of these  
*Muscovites*.

He goes  
ashore.

Won't molest the  
Inhabitants.

Finds several  
Crosses  
set up.

A *Muscovite*  
sent as a  
Scout,

I went ashore, knowing nothing what the *English* had told them, and saw about thirty little wooden Houses there. They were filled with a great quantity of Stock-fish. To prevent my People from doing any harm, I posted a Guard and Centinel for that purpose.

ABOUT these Huts were several Crosses, fix'd over Graves, on which were Inscriptions in *Greek* Character by which I found they were Christians who had been buried there.

THE Guard had been now posted about two Days, when the Fishermen who were fled away, detach'd an old Man of their Company, in order to observe our Motions. The hunter in a

old Fellow was not easily prevailed upon to accept this Commission, however, his Countrymen at last persuaded him to it, telling him, that he was so old, the *French* wou'd certainly not devour him. 1707.

THIS *Muscovite* trembled as he advanced towards the Gate, when the Centinel stopt him, and he was brought on Board. Overjoy'd to meet with several of his own Countrymen, who had received the kindest Treatment; and highly pleas'd to find us, so far from plundering either the Huts or the Fish, that on the contrary we had plac'd a Guard to secure them, and immediately made several Signs of the Cross, by way of Astonishment.

A moment after, he desir'd to be sent ashore, in order to carry this good News to his Companions. Upon the account he gave, they all return'd without making the least scruple, and continuing their fishing as usual, gave us some excellent Salmon, for which I paid them very handsomely.

UPON the Noise which the Squadron had made at its Arrival in those parts, the Governour of the City of *Ala*, twenty Leagues from the place where we then lay, dispatched an Officer in a Boat to view us. I received him

He is seiz'd and carried aboard.

He is overjoy'd.

They return to their Huts,

An Officer comes on board from



1707.  
the Govern-  
ment of  
Cela.

him in a very handsome manner, and having made him some Presents; he was charm'd with the *French* Civility. We had Mass said, and the Officer assisted at it in a standing posture after the *Greek* manner. He was in a *Turkish* Habit, and wore a long Beard.

The Officer  
goes away  
highly sa-  
tisfied.

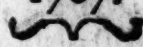
At last, after having been well treated, he told me at taking leave, that the *English* had impos'd upon him, in insinuating that the *French* were Barbarians; that he himself had been an Eye-witness of the contrary, and therefore return'd with an Opinion quite different from what he had before entertain'd of them.

Birds and  
Beasts in  
this Island.

THERE are two sorts of Partridges found in this Island, some White and others of a Pheasant Colour. The latter have an exquisite Taste, and are easily kill'd. There are also a great number of young Snipes and Gold-colour'd Plover. The Country belongs to some Fryars of the *Greek* Church, who there feed a very great number of Animals call'd *Caribous*.

Description  
of the *Caribous*.

THESE *Caribous* are of the bigness of a young Cow; they have crooked Feet, and Horns on their Heads three Foot long, which turn in a circular form, so that the two tips almost meet. These Horns are peculiar in this, that they are fleshy, covered with

with short Hair, and cut by 1707.  
Antlers, like to the Horns of a Stag.   
The Flesh of this Beast is not nice, but  
has a pretty good taste.

BEFORE I set sail, I burnt all the He burns  
all his Pri-  
zes, &c.  
Vessels I had taken, and which cou'd  
not be of any service to me in my  
Cruising. The Fishermen enrich'd  
themselves by it, and got more Tack-  
ling than they cou'd use so long as  
they liv'd; not to mention the remain-  
der of the damag'd Goods, and a large  
Quantity of Iron, which is much  
wanted in those Countries.

FROM the Island of *Kilduin*, I  
sail'd towards the Island 'of *Wardbuys*  
which belongs to the King of *Den-*  
*mark*. In my beginning to Cruize off  
that Island, I spy'd the *Dutch Fleet*, Spies the  
Dutch  
Fleet,  
Convoy'd by three Men of War.  
These three Ships perceiving mine  
unaccompanied, for my whole Squa-  
dron was dispers'd and gone a Cruising,  
made a motion as if they intended to Is alone.  
They seem  
resolved to  
attack him,  
attack me.

I made a Signal to two of my Ships,  
in order that they should come to me;  
which the Enemy perceiving, they  
rouded all their Sail to get off, not  
at all regarding the Fleet which they They fly-  
were to secure. I assisted their Escape, not  
thinking it worth while to take either  
Ships or Sailors, which I did not want;  
and

1707.

Takes a  
great many  
Merchant-  
men.

The Sailors  
fly away  
with part of  
the Cargo.

The Inha-  
bitants  
come to  
him with  
an Offer.

and was resolved to set upon Merchant-men only, which I pursued. Several shelter'd themselves in the Anchorage of the Island of *Wardbuys*. I enter'd the Road, and took all I found in it, seventeen whereof had not a single Man on Board.

THE several Crews were fled, and had carried off the most valuable parts of their Cargoes. About the middle of the Anchorage stands a Hamlet, consisting of about twenty Houses, in the center whereof stands a Church, in which the *Lutherans* assemble.

THE principal Inhabitants came on Board, to acquaint me, that in case I could land with part of my Soldiers I might easily recover all the Effects which the *Dutch* had carried off from their Ships; and offer'd to show me the Places where they had concealed them, provided I wou'd allow a share for the Discovery. Notwithstanding I was much superiour to the Enemy, and that I might easily have made a Decent without running the least risk I thought 'twou'd be prudent not to carry matters farther, in which I did very wisely, as the Sequel will shew.

TWO Days after my Entrance in the Road of *Wardbuys*, my Ships which cruised thereabouts brought



me eight Pinks which had made part of the *Dutch* Fleet, so that we now had taken 25 Vessels. I chose only four of the best, and sent the best Goods on board them, after which I burnt the rest.

1707.

Eight Pinks taken.  
Burnt all the Vessels except four.

WHEN the Goods were remov'd out of one Vessel into another, prodigious quantities were plunder'd, and all the Officers, Writers, Sailors, and Soldiers, enrich'd themselves; in short every body but me; for not to mention that my Employment did not give me leave to concern my self in several things, and that I always had an Aversion that way; I was sensible that a Commissioner of the Navy was on Board my Ship, appointed by the Minister to superintend my Conduct.

Rich Plunder in removing the Goods,

IN perusing the Account of the Goods which had been taken, I was greatly surpriz'd to find so few things of value in so many Prizes; and tho' the whole amounted to a considerable Sum, I thought it very small, when compared to the number of Ships that had been taken. Not one of them had any lading in the Hold; and very little Money, tho' the *Dutch* are generally said to carry great quantities.

The Count gets nothing.

His Sailors embezzle the Goods,

THE most considerable Commodities were Indigo, and *Dutch* Linnen,

The Cargo,

1707.



but of these there was but little quantity. All the rest consisted in Pewter, Cloths and other Woollen Stuffs; Brandy, Wine, and Lees of Wine; Weavers Looms and even Brick. There was also Gold Thread for Embroidery, Ribbons, Toys, and a few pieces of Gold Stuff.

I had already met with something like this, with respect to some *English* Ships, in which I found nothing but large Hogheads filled with Liff, and Taylor's Shreads. I was curious to enquire of some of the Enemies whom I had kept aboard, the Reasons why they took in such inconsiderable Lading.

A trick of  
Sea-Cap-  
tains and  
Waiters.

THEY answer'd, that when they return'd home, they were generally laden with very coarse Goods of little value; that the Produce of those they had carried from their own Country was paid in Bills of Exchange; and for Specie, they always hid it so well in the Ship, that no Soul but the Captain and the Writer knew the place; and that these were so faithful that in case they happen'd to be taken they'd sooner be swallowed up by the Waves, and have their Ship burnt about their Ears, than discover the place where the Treasure lay.

THE

THIS is so true, that one of my Prizes that was carried into *Brest*, had conceal'd in a Hole upwards of fifteen thousand Livres in Specie, and two Chests of Gold Thread which were found by mere chance.

1707.

Example of Goods.

IN fine, besides the multitude of Vessels I had taken, I had also suffer'd four Pinks I had taken to ransom themselves. After having unladen the most valuable part their Cargoes, I got six thousand Livres from each, besides 500 Livres, which certainly is the Commander's Right, tho' the Minister was so unjust as to deprive me of it.

Thinks of returning home.

I had met with such good Success in my Cruizing, as might justly satisfy me, so that now nothing was wanting but to bring back my Squadron safe and sound. But this was not without its difficulties, for I had intercepted the Enemies Trade so much, that I might naturally conclude they'd do all in their power to annoy me. My Fears were lest they should waylay me upon the *Dunkirk* Coast; when falling upon me with a superior Force, they very probably might return me part of the Injuries I had done them; which was so much the easier, that as my Vessel was old, it would not be an easy matter for me to get off.

Is afraid of being attack'd.

L 5

To



1707.  
An Expedient.

Pretends to  
sail for  
*Dunkirk*.

To shun this Danger, I thought the best Expedient wou'd be not to let my Course be known, and to go into *Brest*; and give out that I was sailing for *Dunkirk*. I resolv'd upon this, and accordingly gave notice to the several Ships of my Squadron, that we should soon sail for *Dunkirk*; that such as were desirous of writing to *France*, might send their Letters on board the Commander; that I was going to send the Long-boat to *Gottemburg*, to order Messieurs *Roquesfeuill* and *Hannequin* to come and join me at the place I appointed them; and that the Bark would sail from *Gottemburg* to *Dunkirk*, where she was ordered to go before, and to carry the Letters which I sent to Court.

A Feint.

THE Import of these Letters was, that after having attacked the *English* and *Dutch* Fleets, and carried off a considerable number of the Vessels, I was going to set sail, and to return forthwith to *Dunkirk* with all my Prizes.

Reasons of  
it,

MY view in imposing upon the Court in this manner, and upon such of my Officers to whom I sent this Ship was, that in case she should be taken by the Enemy who would not fail to open the Pacquet, deceived by the false Advice I gave, would wait for me up

on the *Dunkirk* Coast; and supposing she arrived safe, my Officers themselves, to whom I wrote the same particulars as to the Court, would spread this false Report, so that it might pass from *Gottemburg* to *Holland*, and confirm the Enemy in this thought.

1707.



THIS Feint proceeded to my wishes. The long Bark got safe to *Gottsburgh*, when immediately the report of the Course I was to steer was spread up and down in all Places; and afterwards going for *Dunkirk*, she arriv'd very safe, whence my Letters were carried to Court.

Sends a  
Bark to  
*Dunkirk*

THE Minister impos'd upon by the false Advice he had receiv'd, and knowing besides that the Enemy had sent out a strong force, and were waiting for me upon the *Dunkirk* Coast, was very uneasy lest I should come to any harm; and dispatch'd three long Barks one after another, to meet me; to inform me of the posture of the Enemy, and order me to sail for *Brest*.

The Mini-  
ster im-  
pos'd upon  
by this  
Feint,

As the Squadron might possibly be separated in its Passage from the Island of *Wardbuys* to *Brest*, by foul Weather; in which case my Officers, persuaded we were sailing for *Dunkirk*, would infallibly sail for that Harbour, and by that means expose themselves to be taken, I sent Instructions

1707.  
His Instru-  
ctions in  
case of Se-  
paration.

structions to all my Captains seal'd up, with Orders not to open them, except they should be separated, upon pain of being suspended. These Instructions acquainted them with my real design, and ordered them to sail for *Brest*.

Meets a  
Danish Vessel.

HAVING thus taken all my Measures, I set sail, and instead of making for *Dunkirk*, I went towards the Islands of *Ferro*. A *Danish* Vessel I met with, told me that the Enemy were gone from *Toulon*. But I could not understand what Enemies he meant. 'Twas to no purpose, that I asked him a thousand questions upon this head, I could get no other Answer.

A Dutch  
Vessel.

GOING on my course, as I was passing by the *North* of *Ireland*, I met with a *Dutch* Vessel having a Pass, which came from *Bordeaux*, and was laden with Wine. I ask'd him what News from *Toulon*? He answer'd me, that the Duke of *Savoy* had besieg'd that place both by Sea and Land; but that it had been reliev'd, and the Enemy were forced to retire. This second Advice calm'd my Fears, and removed all the Uneasiness with which the former had fill'd me: for tho' the *Dane* told me the Enemy was gone, yet as he was not able to express himself clearly



clearly on this Head, I was in some pain about my Family. 1707.

IN fine, I arriv'd happily at *Brest* with my whole Squadron; and immediately dispatch'd a Courier to give the Court notice of my Arrival.

Arrives at  
*Brest* with  
the whole  
Squadron.

The Minister, who was in great Pain for me, was agreeably surpriz'd, and prais'd me highly for imposing upon the Enemy in the manner I had done.

The Courier said to him, " He has

" deceived us all; you, by the false

" Advice he gave you; and as for us, af-

" ter having given us to understand he

" was sailing for *Dunkirk*, and deliver'd

" the several Captains their Instructi-

" ons seal'd, with Orders not to open

" them, but in case of Separation, he

" carried us by the Islands of *Ferro*;

" no one knowing what he meant by

" the Course he made us steer. Thus

" he made both your Lordship and

" our selves very uneasy; but then

" he has eluded the Enemy, who

" waited for him to no purpose.

THE Minister in his Answer to

my Letter, acquainted me that his

Majesty was highly satisfied with my

Conduct, and approv'd all I had done.

That with regard to himself, he ap-

plauded it also, and that he should not

have had the least reproach to make me,

had I not been quite so indolent, when

clearly

The Cou-  
rier's dis-  
course to  
the Mini-  
ster.

The King  
and Mini-  
ster highly  
satisfied.

my

1707

An Objection to him.

my Crew plunder'd in the manner they had done, which he said, I cou'd not be unacquainted with, as it was done under my Eye, and that I had not once endeavour'd to check them. He concluded, with desiring me to acquaint him why I had acted in this manner.

He answers it.

OVERJOY'D at the Complaint he made, I answer'd, that at my leaving *Dunkirk*, I had been commission'd only to maintain carefully his Majesty's Honour and the Glory of his Arms; that I had us'd my utmost Endeavours to preserve both; that I begg'd him to call to mind that he had put on board my Ship a Commissioner, who was to superintend all my Proceedings in his Majesty's Name; that since there was another Officer appointed for that purpose, I thought I had no business to meddle with it, that he was very sensible, Writers are extremely jealous, whenever any thing is attempted that clashes with their Authority, but that I begg'd the favour of him to order the Commissioner to give him an account of the Plunder, who knew more of it than I did; that the carrying the Goods out of one Ship into another, which was unavoidable, had been done with the consent of the Writers and even the

Com

Commissioner; that the latter would not scruple to own I had invested him with all my Authority on this occasion, and that I had commanded all my Officers to obey him on this Head, upon pain of being suspended. 1707.

I afterwards represented to him, that having got 24000 Livres from several of the Enemies for their Ransom, my Opinion was, that this Sum ought to be employ'd in rewarding the Captains who had done their Duty, and whose Table had put them to great Expence; because there was a much greater number of Officers than usual on Board. The Minister indulg'd my Request, and ordered me to divide the Monies as I should think proper. Wou'd have his Captains rewarded.

I was vastly pleas'd to hear at *Brest*, that the *English* and *Dutch* made heavy Complaints of their Trade being interrupted in that manner, and of my burning so many of their Vessels. I did not indeed wonder at their making such Complaints, since the *French* had not before cruiz'd so far Northward. 'Tis granted.

If after having fought the *English*, the second Day after my leaving the Harbour, the Court had immediately fill'd up the several Vacancies in my Fleet, I had resolv'd to go and post my self near a narrow passage of English and Dutch complaint.



1707.

Much he  
wou'd have  
done, had  
his Fleet  
been  
stronger.

of the white Sea, where, with the few I had, I should infallibly have taken all the Vessels they had sent to those Seas: But as I lost two large Ships and four long Barks; that is, made my Squadron as weak again as it was before; it therefore retarded me a Month, for which reason I did not come upon the Coast of *Muscovy*, till the *English* were got there, and till a Week after the Fleets of *Hamburg* and *Bremen* had past by.

He is ac-  
cus'd of  
Impru-  
dence.

THE Marquis of *Coetlogon*, who was Lieutenant-General, and whom I met with at *Brest*, said to me some Days after my Arrival, upon mentioning my late Campaign, that he cou'd not forbear telling me I had acted imprudently; that indeed I had been justified by the Event; but that 'twas rash in me to venture in unknown Countries and unknown Seas, without having, at least, taken Pilots on board, on whose Experience I might rely.

His Answer.

AFTER having let him run on to what lengths he pleas'd, " My Lord,  
" says I, you have condemn'd me un-  
" heard, and perhaps, after I've told  
" you what I have to say, you'll be  
" of another Opinion. You are in the  
" right to say that Mariners ought to  
" be vastly circumspect, and that 'tis  
" very

1707.

very imprudent to sail without Pilots. And indeed I had desired the Court to provide me with Persons for that Purpose, and had been promised some; but when I was just ready to sail, Word was sent me, that none could be got, and therefore I must do without them. However, this Equipment had cost a great Sum of Money, and the Season was far advanc'd, what cou'd I do in this Case?

I consider'd, that in the Season of the Year in which I was then going to cruize, there was no Night on those Coasts; besides, I had good Charts, and knew that those Coasts were clear from either Shelves or Rocks. Moreover, I was firmly perswaded, that before I could arrive at the Place I intended to go to, I should infallibly take some Ships from the Enemy, whose Pilots might be of Service to me. On these Reflections I undertook my Voyage; every thing has succeeded to my Wishes, what therefore have you now to reproach me with? Coetlogon did me Justice, and frankly owned he had condemned me unjustly.

NOTWITHSTANDING the Season of the Year began to be a little advanc'd, I nevertheless thought it was not yet time to lay up the Ships. I therefore  
 Sets sail a-  
 gain,  
 sail'd

1707. fail'd out of the Road with the Sieurs *Du Cassé* and *Dugué-Troin*. The former sailed for *America*, where he was stationed; and the latter was cruizing with four Men of War, and two Frigates.

Spys an English Fleet.

CONTRARY Winds kept us six Days in the Entrance of the Channel, whence we discovered an *English* Fleet convoy'd by five Men of War, two whereof had three Decks, and were Ninety-Gun Ships. The third had Seventy-six, and the remaining two, Fifty.

Attacks it in concert with *Dugué Troin*.

I joyn'd the Sieur *Dugué*, and am positive we should have taken the whole Fleet, had we acted in Concert. Before we began the Attack, I desired to confer with him about the Order of the Fight; but his too great Vivacity, tho' he was a Man of true Courage, would not permit him to stay for me. As his Ships had been lately careen'd, he sail'd on before, and without having agreed upon one single Particular, followed by one of his Frigates, he went and attack'd the Commander. The *English* Man of War lost all her Masts and was forc'd to strike. The Sieur *Beau-harnois*, Captain in *Dugué's* Squadron, fell upon the 76 Gun Ship, but did not take her; and the Sieur *Courferat*, another of *Dugué's* Captains, fell upon one of 50 Guns, and took her.

AND



AND now I came up, and fell upon the other 50 Gun Ship, which struck, after having made a brave Resistance. I here lost *d'Alonne*, my second Captain, and 30 Soldiers or Sailors.

1707.

The Chevalier takes a 50 Gun Ship

OF the five Men of War which convoy'd the *English* Fleet, there remained only one which had not been attack'd, and was the largest of all the Five. She made off, and was follow'd by *Tourouvre*. I left the *Sieur de Lamonerie*, a Captain in *Dugue's* Squadron, to moor the Man of War I had taken, and following *de Tourouvre*, I chas'd the great Ship, which made off with all her Sail. I was follow'd by the *Chevaliers de Nangis* and *Bart*.

THE *English* Ship fought in her Retreat, and made a furious Fire. Her Cannon and small Shot shatter'd *de Tourouvre's* Ship very much, which staid behind. *Bart*, who had got before me, was also shatter'd, and did not advance. I was just coming up with the *English* Ship, when she was suddenly in a Flame, which blaz'd with so much Violence, that I had like to have been burnt myself, for which Reason I made off.

A close Pursuit.

The *English* Ship on fire,

THIS Ship, which fought very bravely, was on a sudden all on a Blaze, before, behind, and between Decks, occasion'd by the Wind's blowing very hard. 'Tis scarce possible for Imagination

1707.

The Crew  
perish.A dreadful  
Scene.

nation to figure a more dreadful Sight. The greatest Part of the Crew, which was very large, threw themselves into the Sea, and met with Death in the Waves, tho' they had hoped to escape it by flying from the Fire.

ALL those unhappy People perished unassisted. As we expected every Moment to see the Ship blow up at once, and were afraid lest some Cannon or piece of Timber might fall upon the first Ship that came near her, none of ours offered to make up to her, notwithstanding that the Crew call'd out for Assistance in a most moving manner. However, she did not blow up; for, not having Sails enough to keep her above Water, her Ports being open, and the Waves tossing her about, she was soon full of Water, and sunk to rights.

I was hardly ever more embarrass'd in my Life. The *Sieur Dugué's* Fire not permitting him to wait for me, in order that we might agree upon proper Measures; and the Uneasiness I should have felt, had I abandoned him, expos'd me to the greatest Danger, and engaged me to fight, in so tempestuous a Sea, with Ships so much stronger than my own.

HAD the *English* fought with Skill, they would have routed my whole Squadron.

dron. *Dugué* did not run the same 1707.  
*Risque*, his Ships being much stronger than mine, which were only 50 Gun Frigates.

WITH regard to the Man of War that blew up, had the Captain considered her great Strength, he would never have fled from us; for had he work'd the Ship, as a skilful Mariner ought to have done, he needed not to have feared being boarded, since with one Stroke of her Rudder, he might have sunk or forc'd off all the Masts of such Frigates as should venture to attack her. Besides, all his Batteries were open, and in a Condition to serve; whereas my Frigates cou'd employ their upper Tire only, because the Sea was so tempestuous.

The English  
 Captain in-  
 expert,

BE this as it will; 'twas a Happiness for me that I had to do with a Set of ignorant Fellows, who knew not their own Strength. I observed, upon my going up to attack that large Ship, that my Main-top Mast did not reach so high as the Scuttle of that of the Enemy. I also saw a Gentleman on Board her who wore a blue Ribbon, but could never find who he was.

SOME Hours after the Fight, I carried off a *Dutch* Ship, laden with Ammunition. She had joyn'd the *English* Fleet, and had made off at the very begin-

Takes a  
 Dutch Vessel



1707.  beginning of the Fight. A little after this, I sent back the *Sieur Tourouvre*, whose Ship could no longer bear the Sea, and detach'd a Ship of my Squadron, to succour him in case of Need.

As for my Self, and the *Chevalier de Nangis*, I steer'd so exact in the Night, that the next Morning I came up with the large Ship which *Dugué* had taken the Day before. This Ship, after having struck, disappeared, I know not how. I also found a Frigate of *Dugué's* Squadron, which had lost her Mizen-Mast. I set up a Mast in her, and had her tow'd. The *Chevalier de Nangis* gave her to the Frigate, and we return'd safe to *Brest*.

Returns to  
*Brest*.

THE Fleet we had thus attacked, consisted of fourscore Vessels, which were laden with Ammunition, Cloaths, and Horses, for the Use of the *English* Troops in *Portugal*. Of the five Men of War that convoy'd her, three were taken, one burnt, and the fifth got off with the whole Fleet, which we should certainly have taken; certainly, I say, had Mr. *Dugué* behav'd a little more prudently.

Sends Advice to  
Court.

THE Instant of my Arrival at *Brest*, I sent the *Sieur de Tourouvre* to carry an Account to Court of our whole Proceedings. The Minister was so pleas'd, that he received *Tourouvre* with

the

the utmost Civility, and presented him to the King, who express'd so much the greater Satisfaction at this Exploit, as the Court did not imagine I should fail out again, after my coming into the Harbour. 1707. King vastly well satisfied.

At last, the Season for Campaigns being almost over, I refitted, and without waiting for the Minister's Answer, having a favourable Wind, I set Sail, and in three Days arrived at *Dunkirk*, where I laid up my Ships. A little after which, I had Leave to retire, when I set out for the Court. Lays up his Ships.

In my Way, I pass'd by *Beauvais*, where I met with Cardinal *de Fanson*, with several of his Nephews. All my Relations, particularly the Cardinal, paid me the highest Civility. This Prelate had a sincere Affection for me, so that I should be ungrateful, did I not make a publick Acknowledgment of the many Testimonies he gave me of his Friendship upon all Occasions. He ever was very active for my Interest; was delighted with my Success, and troubled at all my Reverses of Fortune; and always discovered the highest Satisfaction, whenever he heard of my succeeding in any thing. Cardinal de Fanson's Civility.

With regard to my last Campaign, he applauded my Conduct in the most obliging manner. The Chevalier's Conquests.

1707. obliging manner; and indeed I must say it did me some Honour, for I had very much infested the Enemy's Trade; had attack'd four of their Fleets, and taken upwards of Seventy of their Merchant-Men, besides the Men of War I had boarded.

THE Minister receiv'd me as kindly as the Cardinal had done, and caress'd me in an extraordinary manner, at least in outward Appearance, and left all his Affairs to carry me to the King.

The King  
applauds  
him.

THE Moment I appear'd, his Majesty was pleas'd to say, *Mr. de Forbin, you have kept your Word, and even done more than you promis'd. I am satisfied both with you, and your Services.* What gave them a greater Merit, was, that for the two last Years, viz. 1706, and 1707, the Navy had been entirely unactive, my Squadron only being out: And with regard to our Land-Forces, they had been beat at *Ramilies*, at *Turin*, and *Barcelona*; so that I was the only Person that had gain'd any Advantage of the Enemy.

The King's  
Discourse  
with the  
Chevalier.

At my first Arrival, I was very assiduous at Court, and never failed to be at the King's Dinner. His Majesty often did me the Honour to speak to me; and one Day was pleas'd to ask me,

after

after  
tac  
I  
the  
Gun  
ing  
does  
were  
Cast  
Part  
fix'd  
Yard  
forw  
Th  
gethe  
throw  
Chain  
canno  
Accid  
ire v  
stern  
hey th  
ties o  
goni  
THE  
o retir  
g to  
ads,  
Words  
onfuse  
aught  
order  
flow,  
VOL.



1707.



after what manner I dispos'd the Attack, and boarded the Ships.

I answer'd, that I began by posting the Soldiers, or Sailors, to the several Guns; that the rest of the Crew being armed with Muskets and Granadoes, with the Officers at their Head, were some posted behind the Fore-Castle, and the rest upon the highest Part of the Stern; that I afterwards fix'd grappling Irons to the End of the Yards, and thus equipp'd, advanc'd forwards towards the Enemy.

THE Moment the Vessels come together (says I) the grappling Irons are thrown, which are fix'd to a thick Chain, so link'd together, that the Ships cannot separate, unless some unforeseen Accident happens. Then my Soldiers fire very thick upon the Prow and Stern of the Enemy's Ship, in which they throw continually such vast Quantities of Hand-Granadoes, that our Antagonists cannot stand it long.

THE Instant I perceive they begin to retire, I advance at their Head, crying to the whole Crew, *Come on my Lords, let us board them!* At these Words the Soldiers and Sailors jump confusedly into the Ship, and the laughter begins. Then I come back in order to command all my Men to follow, and to assist the former, when

VOL. II.

M

all

Manner of  
his Enga-  
ging his E-  
nemies.

1707. obliging manner; and indeed I must say it did me some Honour, for I had very much infested the Enemy's Trade; had attack'd four of their Fleets, and taken upwards of Seventy of their Merchant-Men, besides the Men of War I had boarded.

THE Minister receiv'd me as kindly as the Cardinal had done, and carefs'd me in an extraordinary manner, at least in outward Appearance, and left all his Affairs to carry me to the King.

The King  
applauds  
him.

THE Moment I appear'd, his Majesty was pleas'd to say, *Mr. de Forbin, you have kept your Word, and even done more than you promis'd. I am satisfied both with you, and your Services.* What gave them a greater Merit, was, that for the two last Years, viz. 1706, and 1707, the Navy had been entirely unactive, my Squadron only being out: And with regard to our Land-Forces, they had been beat at *Ramilies*, at *Turin*, and *Barcelona*; so that I was the only Person that had gain'd any Advantage of the Enemy.

The King's  
Discourse  
with the  
Chevalier.

At my first Arrival, I was very assiduous at Court, and never failed to be at the King's Dinner. His Majesty often did me the Honour to speak to me; and one Day was pleas'd to ask me,

after

after  
tack  
I  
the  
Gun  
ing  
does  
were  
Cast  
Part  
fix'd  
Yard  
forwa  
TH  
gethe  
throw  
Chain  
canno  
Accid  
fire v  
Stern  
they th  
ities o  
agoniz  
THE  
o retir  
ng to  
ads,  
Words  
confuse  
laught  
order  
ollow,  
VOL.

1707.



after what manner I dispos'd the Attack, and boarded the Ships.

I answer'd, that I began by posting the Soldiers, or Sailors, to the several Guns; that the rest of the Crew being armed with Muskets and Granadoes, with the Officers at their Head, were some posted behind the Fore-Castle, and the rest upon the highest Part of the Stern; that I afterwards fix'd grappling Irons to the End of the Yards, and thus equipp'd, advanc'd forwards towards the Enemy.

THE Moment the Vessels come together (says I) the grappling Irons are thrown, which are fix'd to a thick Chain, so link'd together, that the Ships cannot separate, unless some unforeseen Accident happens. Then my Soldiers fire very thick upon the Prow and Stern of the Enemy's Ship, in which they throw continually such vast Quantities of Hand-Granadoes, that our Antagonists cannot stand it long.

Manner of  
his Enga-  
ging his E-  
nemies.

THE Instant I perceive they begin to retire, I advance at their Head, crying to the whole Crew, *Come on my Lords, let us board them!* At these Words the Soldiers and Sailors jump confusedly into the Ship, and the laughter begins. Then I come back in order to command all my Men to follow, and to assist the former, when



1707. all fight 'till they have taken the Ship.

 A Circumstance that renders these Fights so bloody, is, that as no Man can possibly fly, they are all oblig'd either to conquer, or be cut to Pieces.

Discourages  
again with  
the King.

His Majesty seem'd satisfied with this Relation; and some Days after having mention'd some of my former Expeditions, he desired me to acquaint him with the Particulars of them. After having satisfied his Majesty in that Particular; *My Enemies* (says he, to me) *must certainly dread you; Yes Sire* (says I) *your Enemies dread very much the Power of your Majesty's Arms.* Another time being in the Anti-Chamber, at the King's Levée, several Lords waited, and among the rest the Prince de Vaudemont, when one of the Gentlemen-Ushers came and desired me to walk in. The King, who was putting his Shirt on, seeing me, said to Cardinal de Fanson; *Here's a Man that's little belov'd by the Venetians, and much dreaded by my Enemies.*

The King  
applauds  
him again.

THESE kind Expressions from his Majesty, sooth'd my Ambition prodigiously, and served to give me so much the more room to expect great Things as I was perswaded the Court had some Obligation to me for my long Service. I was pleasing my self with these Reflections, when the Marquis de Vilette

A vacancy  
happens,

Lieutenant

Lie  
the  
abo  
T  
then  
Hea  
ately  
New  
you  
for  
of  
do  
portu  
don't  
I h  
Heart  
this  
a Cou  
was th  
imme  
him to  
my Fa  
ceed  
lette's  
Day bo  
Paris,  
early in  
ing mu  
very de  
Enemy,  
eave an  
asion.

Lieutenant-General, Commander of the Order of *St. Lewis*, died in *Paris*, about ten in the Evening.

1707.

THE Count *du Luc*, whom I had just then left, and who had my Interest at Heart, no less than his own, immediately wrote to me, to inform me of the News. *This Place* (says he) *would suit you very well; your many Services speak for you, and his Majesty seems to approve of your Conduct. I've given you notice, do you make your Advantage of it. Opportunities come but seldom, and therefore don't let this slip.*

I had my Advancement too much at Heart, to be unactive at my hearing this News. Immediately I dispatch'd a Courier to Cardinal *de Fanson*, who was then at *Versailles*; and as he had immediate Access to the King, begg'd him to intercede with his Majesty in my Favour, in order that I might succeed to some of the Marquis *de Vilette's* Employments. I had heard the Day before, that the Minister was in *Paris*, so that I waited upon him very early in the Morning, without expecting much from him; however, I was very desirous not to have him for my Enemy, and firmly resolv'd not to leave any Stone unturn'd on this Occasion.

Makes Interest for some Employments,

1707.

Waits upon  
the Minister

I found he had heard the News before; therefore I begg'd him to continue me his Protection, and told him I would not sue for any thing except by his Canal; but begg'd him to recollect, that he had promised to assist me whenever an Opportunity should offer it self. As he had already another Person in his Eye, he made me an Answer that was quite foreign to the Purpose.

FROM the Minister's, I went to *Ver-sailles*, impatient to know what Cardinal *de Fanson* had done in this Matter. I waited upon his Majesty, and saw him, as he was going into his Closet, speaking to his Eminence. His Majesty's Hands were laid over the Cardinal's Shoulders, which I took for a good Omen.

Waits on  
Cardinal de  
*Fanson*.

AFTERWARDS, the King going to Mass, I put my self in the way, and saw his Eminence follow him, who being come back from Chappel, return'd to his Palace, whither I went a Moment after. 'Cousin (says the Cardinal to me) I've spoke to his Majesty for you, and have set your long Services, and the Zeal with which you've espous'd his Interest, in the strongest Light. I represented to him, that Monsieur *de Villette's* Death had made a Vacancy, which you might flatter your self with the Hopes of filling

The Cardinal inter-  
ceeds for  
the Author.

'That



1707.

‘That as you were fired with the greatest Bravery, if his Majesty would please to gratify you on this Occasion, ’twould increase, if such a thing were possible, the Vigour with which you had always pursued his Majesty’s Affairs.

To this the King answered in these very Words: ‘Tis true, Monsieur le

The King’s Answer.

Cardinal, that your Nephew has always done me signal Service, and I’m highly satisfied with him; but should I indulge him this Favour he asks, too many People would murmur. ’Tis not but that he deserves to be rewarded more than any of them; but let him leave this to me; let him continue to serve me as he has hitherto done; I’ll take care of him, and will make his Fortune.

Not favourable to him,

‘How! (says I to the Cardinal) the King himself owns I deserved to be rewarded more than any other Person; he is sensible of it, he owns it; ’tis in his Power to dispose of every thing as he pleases, and yet does nothing for me! for in short, ’twill be to no purpose for me to exert my self, since were I to work Miracles, there always will be Complainers; and my Seniors, who are us’d to do nothing, and to deserve just as much, tho’ they have no other Title but their Seniority

His Complaint on this Occasion.

1707.

‘ rity and their Complaints, will never  
‘ theless be advanc’d.

The Cardi-  
nal's Answer

THE Cardinal observing the Indig-  
nation with which I spoke; ‘ Cousin  
‘ (says he) I find I've acted very fillily  
‘ in acquainting you with so many Par-  
‘ ticulars; and I should not have let  
‘ you so plainly into whatever the King  
‘ said in your Favour; but you are not  
‘ yet thoroughly acquainted with  
‘ Courts; here a Man must wait with  
‘ Patience; must sue at a proper Op-  
‘ portunity; and not despond, tho' he  
‘ be not immediately gratified. Con-  
‘ tinue to do your Duty, as you have  
‘ hitherto done, and depend upon't,  
‘ you'll at last obtain all your Wishes;

Conduct of  
Courts.

Expresses  
his Hard-  
ships at Sea.

‘ My Lord (says I) my Profession is  
‘ vastly severe and hazardous; If I'm  
‘ not to expect any Favours but when  
‘ my Turn comes, I shall be dead be-  
‘ fore they happen. A Man must dai-  
‘ ly expose his Life to the Mouth of a  
‘ Cannon; and must risque being killed  
‘ with small Shot and Granadoes; must  
‘ board Ships, seize his Enemy by the  
‘ Throat, run the risque of being burnt  
‘ or drown'd, and brave a thousand  
‘ Dangers, in which Valour is so far  
‘ from being a Safeguard, that 'tis a  
‘ Miracle if a Man escapes. If the  
‘ Hopes of being advanc'd, in spite  
‘ of indolent People, whose Complaints  
‘ and

‘ and  
‘ buo  
‘ tin  
‘ Par  
‘ as t  
‘ no  
‘ Ch  
‘ Cha  
‘ fam  
‘ I do  
‘ whe  
‘ Tr  
me, to  
made  
Marc  
woul  
Besid  
de Tou  
Mini  
tified  
murs;  
nant-  
D'O  
St. E  
Lange  
Navy  
nothr  
befor  
Iw  
some  
lish'd  
Grati

1707.

and Clamours a Man dreads, don't  
'buoy him up, 'tis impossible to con-  
'tinue.

'As for my Self, I'll act the same  
'Part with my Seniors, and be as calm  
'as they are. And since they perform  
'no other Exploits than sitting in their  
'Chimney - corners, and drinking  
'Champaign, I'm resolv'd to do the  
'same, firmly assur'd, that (provided  
'I do but complain) I shall be advanc'd  
'when my Turn comes.

His Indig-  
nation at  
being unre-  
warded.

THE Minister who refus'd to serve  
me, took Mr. *Du Cassé*, and would have  
made him Lieutenant-General; but the  
Marquis *d'O*, who was his Senior,  
would have murmur'd, and very justly.  
Besides, he attended upon the Count  
*de Toulouse*, who protected him. The  
Minister judging he could not be gra-  
tified without occasioning great Mur-  
murs, instead of making one Lieute-  
nant-General, nominated two, Messieurs  
*D'O* and *Du Cassé*. The Commandery of  
*St. Lewis* was given to the Marquis *de*  
*Langeron*, Lieutenant-General of the  
Navy; and for my own Part, I had  
nothing but empty Promises, as was  
before observ'd.

The Author  
neglected.

I was reveng'd for this Promotion, by  
some satyrical Poems which were pub-  
lish'd in *Paris* upon that Affair; a poor  
Gratification, which pleas'd for a Mo-

The Promo-  
tion ban-  
ter'd.



1707. ment, but was of little Service to my Affairs.

A Month after the Promotion, the Minister sent to me, and spoke to me as follows. 'I've at last found out the Secret, to raise you to the Post of Lieutenant-General, since you so earnestly desire it. At Mr. *de Villette's* Death it was not in my Power to do you the least Service, but you see I don't forget you, and that I embrace the first Opportunity to serve you.

The Chevalier de St. George.

'THE King has given his Majesty of Great-Britain six thousand Men, who are to go with him to Scotland, where a considerable Party of his Subjects only wait a Descent to declare in his Favour. His Majesty has appointed you to convoy that Prince, and to head the Forces abovemention'd: You must set out immediately for *Dunkirk*, to give Orders for fitting out the Transports.

He is order'd to convoy the Pretender to Scotland, and to head the Forces.

'THIS, as you may suppose, is a Secret of the highest Importance; I don't doubt but you'll act with Prudence in it; and as the equipping of so many Ships in this Port, might give the Enemy some Suspicion, you must feign particular Equipments, as you shall judge proper.'

Greatly astonish'd at it.

I was vastly surpriz'd at this Proposal. I knew the Situation of Scotland, and

and w  
feasib  
Anne,  
Union  
by giv  
and D  
presun  
der th  
ding  
Howe  
great  
Beside  
me wi  
any P  
you'd  
mediat  
no oth  
Post o  
never  
cent w  
was qu  
taken u  
lar'd i  
here w  
Fleet;  
King to  
astly,  
pon t  
Retreat  
Destru  
ot to  
Mr. c  
speak

1707.

and was sensible that every thing was feasible. 'Tis true indeed, that Queen Anne, who had at last compleated the Union of the two Kingdoms, had thereby given occasion to great Murmurings and Discontent; whence it might be presum'd, that such as were uneasy under this Change, would not fail of siding with the *Chevalier de St. George*. However, in the whole, there was no great Expectation of a Revolution. Besides, as the Minister in acquainting me with his Project, had not mention'd any Port which might receive us, I cou'd not forbear answering him immediately; that in case he could find no other Method of raising me to the Post of Lieutenant-General, I should never mount so high. That this Descent was not feasible; that every thing was quiet in *Scotland*, no one having taken up Arms in it, nor any City declar'd in favour of the *Chevalier*; that there was no Harbour to shelter the Fleet; that there was no Place for the King to land his Forces securely; and lastly, that to set six thousand Men upon the Sand, without *Asylum* or retreat, was to send them to certain Destruction, and to be cut to Pieces, not to say worse.

Mr. de *Ponchartrain* answer'd, 'You speak too much in the Tone of a

M S

'Philosopher;

No great  
Hopes of a  
Revolution.

Objects a-  
gainst the  
Descent.

The Mini-  
ster's An-  
swer.

1707

The Count's  
Reply to the  
Minister.

Proposes an  
Expedient.

To fall up-  
on Amster-  
dam.

Philosopher, his Majesty will have  
it so, and that's enough. His Mini-  
sters undoubtedly have certain Views  
with which you are entirely unac-  
quainted. Besides, have not I already  
told you, that the Malecontents wait  
only for the Arrival of the Fleet,  
when they will declare themselves?  
Don't therefore enquire into so many  
things; but endeavour only to answer  
the good Opinion the World has of  
you. My Lord (says I) no one can  
be more zealous for my Master's Ser-  
vice than I am; and I can't see fir-  
thousand Men perish, who might be  
so usefully employ'd upon other  
Occasions, without speaking my  
Thoughts; for if they land in Scot-  
land, you may before-hand consider  
them as lost.

BUT let us do better; since the  
Court will give up these Troops to  
Destruction, e'en let me have them.  
I'll take my Opportunity, and when  
the Armies shall be fighting in Flan-  
ders, I'll embark these six thousand  
Men in small Vessels, which I'll re-  
inforce with the Gallies, when depend-  
on't, I'll sail out of the Road, under  
the Enemy's Nose, and will defy them  
to hinder me. I'll go and attack Am-  
sterdam, which will be unprovided  
with Soldiers, and defended only by



1707.

'the weak Militia, and will then  
 'take that City. I'll begin by set-  
 'ting fire to above a thousand Ships  
 'that lye in the Harbour; and as I  
 'shan't pretend to keep that City for  
 'any Time, I'll burn it to the Ground,  
 'and immediately the Enemies will be  
 'forc'd to conclude a Peace with us.  
 'For, my Lord, you know better  
 'than I do, that the whole Wealth and  
 'Strength of *Holland* lies in that City;  
 'and are very sensible, that after this  
 'Expedition, and the Loss the Enemy  
 'will thereby sustain, the *Dutch* will  
 'have no Inclination to carry on the  
 'War, but be very glad to have a Peace  
 'concluded.

Easy to  
 enough to  
 effect,

'But (says the Minister) what will be  
 'the Fate of the six thousand Men, the  
 'Ships and Gallies? No matter for that  
 '(says I), are not you resolv'd to sacri-  
 'fice them? After I have set fire to  
 '*Amsterdam*, let those save themselves  
 'that can; for I know the Enemy won't  
 'let me pass unmolested, but will en-  
 'deavour to block me up in the *Texel*;  
 'but then every Man must provide for  
 'himself; and as for my own Part, I'll  
 'take my Measures so well, that de-  
 'pend on't I'll make my Escape.

Provided  
 the 6000  
 Men maybe  
 sacrific'd-

'LET'S not think of this Project  
 '(says Mr. de Ponchartrain) the King  
 'has promis'd to assist the Chevalier de

The Mini-  
 ster will  
 have him  
 obey,

St. George

1707.

Order'd to  
get the E-  
quipment  
ready.

' *St. George* and his Lady. We may  
' be perswaded that their *Britannick*  
' Majesties would not have requested  
' this Succour with so much Warmth,  
' had they not room to flatter them-  
' selves that this Descent would be suc-  
' cessful. Do you therefore prepare  
' to obey your Orders, without trou-  
' ling your Head about the Success it  
' may meet with.'

' SINCE Matters stand thus (says I)  
' I've no more to say, and have no-  
' thing to do but to get every thing  
' ready: And here I must beg the  
' Favour of you to take Notice, that  
' 'twill be a difficult Matter to make  
' this Equipment, without letting the  
' Intendant of *Dunkirk* into the Se-  
' cret; who otherwise, being of so  
' jealous a Temper, and unacquainted  
' with our Views, would therefore  
' start a thousand Difficulties, which  
' would absolutely put a Stop to the  
' Equipment.' The Minister consent-  
ed to this last Proposal, and said, he  
would remove all Obstacles.

Has an ugly  
Affair upon  
his Hands.

WHILST I had thus a Commis-  
sion given me, with which I was not  
very well pleas'd, I was involv'd in  
an Affair, which I no ways dreamt  
of; and which would undoubtedly  
have given me much Trouble, and  
perhaps have compleated my Ruin,  
had

had n  
very

TH

Cam

their

plaint

repres

ought

Friend

Harbo

Count

to con

near th

Coast

Vessels

mande

besoug

Author

might

TH

ed fa

nd bei

t any

n that

nd the

laints

ne pub

f Nat

onclud

ark, I

sisted

sh'd i

sion de

had not the Court at that time been very much inclin'd to favour me. 1707.

THE *Dutch* exasperated at my last Campaign, and the stop it had put to their Trade, had made great Complaints to the King of *Denmark*, and represented to him, that his Majesty ought never to suffer the Ships of his Friends or Allies to be infested in his Harbours in a time of Peace; that Count *de Forbin* had been so bold, as to come and burn in the Road, or near the Island of *Wardhuis*, on the Coast of *Norway*, twenty five *Dutch* Vessels, all richly laden; That they demanded Justice for this Outrage, and besought his Majesty to interpose his Authority, in order that Satisfaction might be made them.

The *Dutch* complain to the King of *Denmark* against the Count,

THE King of *Denmark* had listened favourably to their Complaints, and being resolv'd to have Satisfaction at any rate, wrote to his Ambassador on that Subject in the sharpest Terms, and the latter had made terrible complaints upon that Account. He charg'd the publicly with violating the Law of Nations, and the Treaty of Peace concluded between *France* and *Denmark*, by inexcusable Hostilities; and insisted strongly upon my being punished in such a manner as that Action deserv'd.

The *Danish* Ambassador will have the Count punished,

WHAT



1707!



The Count  
goes to the  
Minister.

WHAT Variance soever there might be between the two Crowns, the Court could not help listning to his *Danish* Majesty's Complaints, and at least give him some shadow of Satisfaction. Mr. *de Ponchartrain* sent for me, and after having acquainted me with his Business, without letting me into the Dispositions of the Court on that Head; "Go, says he to me, to Monsieur *de Torcy*, to whom all Foreigners address themselves, and clear yourself from the Accusations of the *Danish* Embassador.

SURPRIZ'D at what I heard, "You know, Sir, says I, what you your self order'd me with your own Mouth, and you certainly cannot have forgot, that having ask'd you whether you would allow me to attack the Enemy in the *Danish* Ports, you directly bid me not fail to do it, and that it would give you the highest Pleasure; I obey'd; what therefore can they want with me? Methinks you, my Lord, are bound to justify me. Go, go, says the Minister, do as I say, and leave the rest to me.

Who advises him  
how to act.

UPON this I went to Mr. *de Torcy*, but did not know how to make my own Apology; for to speak the truth I had no other way of justifying myself

self  
ing  
which  
hav  
sons.  
giver  
only  
to pr  
cont  
could  
receiv  
and  
Mr.  
woul  
I o  
North  
I had  
of the  
deed,  
which  
of the  
took  
sides  
bour,  
as the  
which  
where  
King's  
either  
Ships  
to hav  
ried o  
Cargo

1707.

W

self, in a solid manner, but by insisting upon the Orders I had receiv'd, which was the very thing I would have shunn'd, and that for two Reasons. First, because as the Minister had given me Orders by word of Mouth only, I should have had a hard matter to prove it, in case he affirm'd the contrary; and secondly, because I could not mention the Orders I had receiv'd, without exposing the Court; and rendring my self obnoxious to Mr. Ponchartrain's Displeasure, who would never have forgiven me.

Apologizes  
for his  
Conduct.

I declar'd, that having met off the North Cape with a Dutch Fleet which I had chas'd, I presently took eight of the Ships in open Sea; that indeed, pursuing the rest of the Fleet, which was got into the Foreign Road of the Island of Wardhuys, I there took seventeen more Ships; but besides that what had pass'd in the Harbour, ought to be consider'd merely as the continuation of the Fight, which had begun in the open Sea, where I was allow'd to attack the King's Enemies; I had not found either Soldiers or Sailors on board these Ships; and that as the Enemy seem'd to have left them, after having carried off the most valuable part of the Cargoes, I thought I was at liberty

1707. to seize upon them, since there was not a Soul on board.

I intreated his *Danish* Majesty's Ministers to consider, that as the Crews of those Vessels had fled for shelter to a little Village in the middle of the Harbour, where I might have forc'd them with the greatest ease; and the *Danes* having come aboard my Ship, and offer'd, in case I would give them a Reward, to show me the place where the *Dutch* had hid all they could carry off; I always answer'd them, that I look'd upon the King of *Denmark's* Territories as sacred; therefore cou'd not presume to attempt any thing in his Dominions, and the *Dutch* had been very fortunate in sheltering themselves in them.

I added some other weaker Reasons, and concluded with protesting, that I never intended to do any thing that might give his *Danish* Majesty Offence; and should never have been so bold, to go at once into his Harbour to attack the King's Enemies, had I not been drawn thither, involuntarily as it were, and by a continuity of Action, begun in the open Sea.

THIS Declaration being sent to the King of *Denmark* he was not satisfied with it; nor indeed was he to blame. The Embassador renewed his

Com-

His respect  
for the  
King of  
*Denmark*.

Declaration  
sent to the  
King of  
*Denmark*.

Compl  
before

I wa  
upon  
same  
fling  
was not  
mark's  
serv'd,  
ing him  
here, a  
made o

TH  
the O  
Minist  
Court.  
mission  
after  
drew u  
of an  
Soldie  
puted  
to rig  
to hav  
five M  
those  
Men  
they,  
for the

TH  
drawn  
who  
this E



Complaints with greater warmth than before. 1707.

I was oblig'd to wait a second time upon Mr. de Torcy. I told him the same things, and added a few trifling Reasons; but as the Court was not satisfied with the King of Denmark's Conduct, as was before observ'd, and did not much regard making him Satisfaction, the Affair stopt here, and no farther mention was ever made of it. The Affair compos'd.

THE Intendant of *Dunkirk*, upon the Orders he had received from the Minister, had been some Days at Court. Upon his Arrival the Commissioners of the Navy met, and after having conferr'd together, drew up, unknown to me, the Plan of an Equipment, for carrying the Soldiers into *Scotland*; they had computed by their Fingers, and concluded to rig fifteen Pinks, each of which was to have 300 Men on board; and that five Men of War should be added to those fifteen Vessels, with each 300 Men on board; in this manner, said they, there will be just Ships enough for the purpose. Plan of a Fleet for Scotland,

THIS wonderful Plan being thus drawn up, *Latouche* the first Clerk, who had been let into the secret of this Expedition, represented to the Mini-

1707. Minister, that as I was to have the Conduct of it, I ought to know what had been determin'd, in order to prevent the Difficulties that might arise in the Execution.

is let into  
the Design.

UPON this hint, the Minister sent for me in, and acquainted me with the result of what the Commissioners had agreed upon; but I was so exasperated to hear their silly Plan, that forgetting who I spoke to, and with all the fire of a *Provencial*; *What ignorant Creature, says I, has form'd this Project?* The Minister, who also was a little surpsiz'd, ask'd me what I found amiss in it. "Every thing says I; for in the first place it ought to be consider'd that as *Dunkirk* is situate betwixt *Holland* and *England*, the Enemy will at every turn be upon us; and in the second place, that the *Pinks* being very heavy, and clumsily built, are by necessary consequence improper for an Expedition which is to be made in a Trice, and without giving the Enemy time to look about them.

"You plainly see, Sir, continued I, that these two Reflections alone would be more than sufficient to exclude any Thought of ever making use of this sort of Ships. Then you are to consider, that if we

" meet

the  
hat  
pre-  
rise  
tent  
the  
had  
era-  
for-  
all  
ram  
ect?  
sur-  
n it.  
first  
that  
Hol-  
will  
d in  
s be-  
t, are  
open  
o be  
giv-  
bout  
ed I  
alone  
t to  
mak-  
Phen  
we  
meet

“ meet with a contrary Wind going 1707.

“ out of Port, we shall infallibly lose

“ our Course; that it will take up a

“ great deal of Time to go and come,

“ and that if the Enemy pursue us we

“ shall be all taken.

“ B U T how shall we do better?

“ *said the Minister*; thus, *said I*; let

“ the best Privateers that are at

“ *Dunkirk* be equipp'd; 'tis true in-

“ deed that they will not carry so

“ many Soldiers as *Pinks* will, but the

“ Number will make amends for it.

“ With such Ships we shall sail much

“ faster. If we meet with contrary

“ Winds we shall bear up without

“ being drove out of our Course, and

“ if a more numerous Enemy come

“ upon us, we shall be in a condition

“ to escape”. The Minister enter'd

“ into these Reasons, and bid me go

“ and settle all things with *Latouche*.

NEVERTHELESS I was very un-

“ easy with my Commission. All the

“ time I staid at Court I made several

“ Attempts to persuade them to drop an

“ Undertaking which I saw wou'd be

“ so unprofitable. I thought I should

“ never be tir'd with representing the

“ inconveniences of it. I said to the

“ Minister a thousand and a thousand

“ times, that the best we cou'd make of

“ it wou'd be an unprofitable and disho-

“ nourable

The  
Count's  
vain Re-  
monstran-  
ces to the  
Minister,



1707.  nourable Cruize; that I was thoroughly mortified that his Majesty had chose me for an Expedition which had all the Evidence of being attended with ill Success; That if a Descent was made, the 6000 Men wou'd surely be lost and the Forces of the Kingdom diminished in proportion; besides the Scandal of giving into a Chimerical Enterprize, which ought to be look'd upon as a meer Vision. The Answer to all this was the same as before, that the Loss of those 6000 Men gave them no Trouble, provided it gave Satisfaction to the King of *England*; I cou'd never get any thing else out of them.

His Application upon it to Cardinal de *Fansen*.

ALL these Arguments did not satisfy me; I was resolv'd before I fail to make one Attempt more, and for that purpose I apply'd to the Cardinal de *Fansen*. "I have an Important Affair, *said I*, to communicate to your Eminence, but I can only discover it to you under an Oath of Secrecy. At this the Cardinal look'd on me very wistly, and having given me his Benediction he said to me, *speak out*.

I then discours'd to him the thing in question, and every thing that pass'd between me and M. de *Ponchartrain*. "Depend upon it, my Lord, *said*

said I, the Troops, the Equipment, 1707.

and the whole Expence is so much  
Loss to the Kingdom. I am weary  
of representing all this to the Mini-  
ster, he won't give it a hearing.  
For my part, it vexes me to have  
the Conduct of an Enterprize,  
in which I am sure to come off but  
scurvily. I know that his Majesty  
pays a very great regard to your  
Opinion. Be so good as to speak to  
the King, and if possible divert a  
Project, the Expence of which may  
be employ'd to a better account  
elsewhere.

COUSIN, reply'd the Cardinal, I The Cardi-  
nal's Ad-  
vice to the  
Count,  
am much oblig'd to you for your  
Secret; I have forgot it already; I  
never heard a Word of the matter.  
I am no Busy-body, and far from  
diving into Secrets which the Court  
wou'd keep from me. But do you  
your self speak to the King, and  
take your own time for it: His Ma-  
jesty will hear you, and when you  
have declar'd your Opinion to him,  
'tis his Prerogative to act as he shall  
think fit, and our Duty to obey.

THE Night before I set out for The Count  
takes  
Leave of  
the King.  
Dunkirk, I went to Court to take my  
leave of the King. M. le Count, said  
his Majesty to me, *You are sensible of  
the Importance of your Commission, I hope  
you*

1707. you will discharge it like your self.  
 Sir, says I, your Majesty does me  
 a very great Honour, but if you  
 will vouchsafe me a Moment's Au-  
 dience, I have several things to re-  
 present to you concerning this Com-  
 mission. The King who had been  
 inform'd by his Minister of the  
 Objections I had made to it all along,  
 only said, *M. Forbin, I wish you a good  
 Voyage, I have Affairs upon my Hands,  
 and cannot hear you now.*

And de-  
 parts for  
 Dunkirk,

I set out next Day for Dunkirk  
 where I forwarded the Equipment of  
 30 Privateers, and 5 Men of War  
 with all possible diligence. I had many  
 difficulties to struggle with, but at  
 last I surmounted them all. In order  
 to put a stop to the Speculations of  
 the Public, which so considerable an  
 Armament began to raise, for the Se-  
 cret was already guess'd at, I gave out  
 that the *Sieurs de Tourouvre, de Nan-  
 gis, and Girardin* were each of them  
 equipping Ships on their own Ac-  
 count.

EVERY thing was ready, at least  
 as far as concern'd me, and nothing  
 was wanting but the Arrival of the  
 Seamen and the Soldiers that were to  
 be put on board. The latter were for-  
 wardest, for I heard that they were  
 at *St. Omers*, which is but one Day's  
 march



1707.

march from *Dunkirk*; but our Seamen were not yet come. I was afraid that the Arrival of 6000 Men, and the making of so considerable an Armament in the very sight of the Enemy, wou'd give a handle for fresh Conjectures, the rather because the stir that was all over *France*, by sending all the *English* and *Irish* in the Kingdom to *Dunkirk*, made the Design still the more talk'd of. Therefore taking the *Sieur Dugue* along with me, who was Intendant of the Port, and the *Sieur Beaurnois* the Intendant of the Naval Armament, we went to the Count *de Gasse*, who was arrived two Days before to command the Troops, and I represented to him the Inconvenience of sending for the 6000 Men before every thing was ready for sailing.

His Representation to the General of the Forces against their Arrival before every thing was ready,

THE Count own'd that I was much in the right, and that in short, the Forces ought not to come till all was ready for their Embarking; he gave Orders therefore that they should halt at *St. Omers*. The Seamen arriv'd in a few Days after, the Ships put out into the Road, the Soldiers were sent for, and all was embark'd.

THE King of *England* (as our Author calls him) arriv'd two Days after; and either from Fatigue, or from some other previous Cause, fell sick of the

The Chevalier de *St. George's* Arrival at *Dunkirk*,

1708. the Measles, and had a Fever for two Days, which was such a delay to the departure of the Fleet as gave the Enemy time to look about them. Thirty eight *English* Men of War came and anchor'd at *Graveling*, two Leagues from *Dunkirk*. I went my self to take a view of them, and being fully satisfy'd that they were Men of War, I wrote to Court and signify'd that the Enemies Force was too much superiour to ours, for us to attempt to get out in their sight; that it was impossible for us to sail without hazarding the Loss of All; that the Enemies Fleet which was so near at hand, wou'd not fail to pursue us; that as we had no Port in *Scotland* to retire to, 'twas evident if they did but attack us we shou'd be entirely at their Mercy, and that therefore it was my Opinion we shou'd lay up the Squadron, and put off the Descent to a more favourable Opportunity.

Thirty eight *English* Men of War cast Anchor at *Graveling*.

The Count's Remonstrances to Court for putting off the Expedition.

THERE were People at *Dunkirk* who were of a different Opinion. Several ignorant or perhaps prejudic'd Cavillers said publickly, that the Ships which were in sight were only Merchant-men, that had been muster'd together in haste, and sent out at all Adventures, in hopes that they wou'd perhaps hinder, or at least retard the departure

Departure  
Fault  
thought  
sy to  
made  
UP  
to Co  
sorry  
viv'd  
especi  
during  
cast A  
for nev  
than th  
SEVI  
rs by  
uch a  
ne Qu  
ter'd  
queen  
esh In  
d her  
positive  
Engla  
ey hin  
ting i  
THE T  
the  
at we  
ling.  
nt, wh  
been  
VOL.  
depar

Departure of the Fleet. They found Fault with my Objections, and said a thousand things by which it was easy to see the particular Motives that made them talk so.

1708.

UPON the Letters which I had writ to Court, Orders came to unrig. The sorry Arguments of People were reviv'd with more Clamour than ever; especially after the Enemy's Retreat, during this, to the *Downs*, where they cast Anchor, which had given a Handle for new Talk, even more disagreeable than the former.

The Clamour, upon Orders from Court to unrig.

SEVERAL, who were sure to be Gain'd by the Departure of the Fleet, sent such a Pack of Lyes to Court, and to the Queen (*Dowager*) of *England*, as alter'd their Resolution: For the Queen being then at *Versailles*, made my self Instances to the King, who granted her all she desired, and I receiv'd positive Orders to conform to the King's *England's* Will and Pleasure, and to obey him in every thing, without dissenting it.

The Orders countermanded.

THE Troops were actually embark'd, Ships the King's Health recover'd, so that we only waited a fair Wind for sailing. We look'd for it every Month, when the Count *de Gasse*, who had been promis'd the Staff of a Mar-

The Impatience of the Count *de Gasse* for the Fleet's Departure, and the Reason of it.



1708.



Our Au-  
thor's Re-  
monstrance  
against the  
Chevalier's  
going a-  
board.

shal of *France*, as soon as the King of *England* was at Sea, being uneasy at so many Delays, and afraid of having his Hopes either dash'd, or postpon'd, in case the Fleet did not depart, secretly caball'd to perswade the King to embark, to the end (said he) that his Majesty might be ready to sail with the first fair Wind.

THE Prince being perswaded by what had been said to him, sent for me, and declar'd that he was resolv'd to lye aboard. I represented to him, that as both Wind and Tide were against us, I did not think it convenient for his Majesty to be in such haste to embark, but desired him to believe me, that as soon as the Weather permitted, whether 'twas by Night or by Day, we would take effectual Measures that nothing should retard our Departure.

NEXT Day the King, whom they had been teizing again, harp'd upon the same String, and told me he was absolutely determin'd to go and lye aboard. This second Attack confounded me; I said, it was as yet too soon that however he was Master, and might do what he pleas'd; and that if he positively required it, I would obey, but then I would not be answerable for any Consequence.

By the Conduct of those who were so much in haste for his Embarking, I guess'd, that besides their private Interest, which they always had in view, they had a mind to make the Officers of the Navy answerable for the Event of this Enterprize.

1708.  
The Reasons why  
th' Embark-  
ment was so  
much press'd

I was not ignorant of the Broils between the two Ministers, of the War, and of the Navy. The Emissaries of the former only press'd so much for the Embarkation, to the end, that if the Enterprize miscarry'd after the King and the Generals were embark'd, the Minister of War might lay all the Blame of it upon the Navy, by telling the King, 'Sire, I discharg'd what was incumbent on me, the Troops and the Generals were put on Board, and I punctually executed your Majesty's Orders, so that the Miscarriage of the Design cannot be ascribed to the Delay of the Seamen.

In order that M. de Ponchartrain, whose Interest I had still very much at Heart, tho' I had reason to complain of him, might not be liable to this Reproach, I went to the Count de Maffei, and demonstrated to him how proper it was to let the King go aboard, while both Wind and Tyde were against us. He gave but little

The Count's  
Friendship  
to M. de  
Ponchar-  
train.

1708.

His Expo-  
sition  
with the  
Count de  
Gasse, a-  
gainst the  
Chevalier's  
going a-  
board.

Heed to my Remonstrance; it was in vain to tell him of any Risque to which such a false Step would expose the whole Army, for he parry'd all my Arguments by wild frothy Non-sense.

BEING provok'd at such insignificant Answers, I burst into a downright Passion, and raising my Voice, ' (said I) you are for embarking the King of *England* before his Time; ' take heed what you do, but depend on't, you shan't put a Trick either upon the Navy, or me. The King ought not to go Aboard 'till both Wind and Tyde are favourable; ' you insist upon it, I must obey; but ' take great Care, I will drown every one of you. As for my Part, I shan't run no Risque, for I can swim, and ' shall get off well enough.'

I made an Experiment of this Menace in hopes that it would intimidate the Count; but his Ambition to make his Court to the Minister, and more than all, the Dignity of Marshal of *France* which he thought it long before he obtain'd, render'd all my Endeavours of no Avail: For the King of *England* and all the Officers embark'd, and so we must.

SINCE



SINCE they were resolv'd to run all Hazards, I did no less, for I was forc'd to Anchor in the middle of Rocks, and that same Night the whole Fleet was endanger'd by a High Wind; but the King, young as he was, saw the Danger with a Calmness and Intrepidity not to be expected at his Years, but his Retinue quak'd for fear.

1708.

The whole Fleet in Danger.

The Chevalier de St. George's Intrepidity.

THE Count de Gasse, who the Night before was proclaim'd aboard my Ship, a Marshal of France, by the Title of the Marshal de Matignon, was as much affrighted as the English. In short, they were all sick, the Tears flow'd out of their Eyes, and they earnestly press'd me to return into the Road.

The Count de Gasse declar'd Marshal of France.

I was too well pleas'd at what they suffer'd to grant their Request, *I'll do no such thing* (said I) *the Wine is drawn, and it must be drank; suffer as much as you will, I am very glad of it. I shan't pity ye; you wou'd have your Wills; What d'ye complain for?*

Forbin insults them in their Danger,

THREE of our best Ships were upon the Point of being utterly lost, for they broke their Cables, and 'twas a Wonder they were sav'd. Two Days after the Wind turning fair, we set sail again, and upon the third Day we arriv'd upon the Coasts of Scotland, with-

The Fleet's Arrival on the Coast of Scotland,

1708. in Sight of Land. Our Pilots had made a wrong Reckoning of six Leagues, but they corrected their Mistake, and both Wind and Tide proving contrary, we Anchored in the Dusk of the Evening before the *Frith* of *Edinburgh*, about three Leagues from Land.

OUR making of Signals, kindling up Fires, and discharging of Cannon was in vain, for no body came to us. About Midnight Word was brought me, that five Cannon were fired towards the *South*. I always went to Bed in my Cloaths, ever since I came out, therefore I quickly rose, and imagin'd that those five Discharges could be nothing but a Signal of the Enemy who had follow'd our Fleet.

The *English* Fleet pursues it.

I was not mistaken in my Conjecture for at Day-break we discover'd the *English* Fleet at Anchor, but four Leagues from us, which was a Sight that did not please me. We were pent up in a sort of Gulph, so that I had a Capacity to double before I could get Sea room.

The Count's Stratagem to get off with his Fleet.

I plainly saw that I could not get off without recourse to some Stratagem and therefore I immediately caus'd our Fleet to set sail, and advanc'd towards the Enemy, as if I intended to attack them.

1708.

them. They were under Sail, and seeing our manner of working, put themselves in Line of Battle, imagining I was making towards them, which was the Reason that they lost a great deal of Way; for I took the Advantage of their Carelessness, and giving a Signal for the whole Fleet to follow me with all the Sail they could crowd, I alter'd my Course, and thought of nothing but making the best of my way off.

WHILE I was thus endeavouring to disengage the Fleet, the *English* who were aboard my Ship began to murmur, and reproach'd me in plain Terms, saying that I was in the wrong to fly, and that the Ships we had seen were only a *Danish* Fleet, which came every Year to *Edinburgh* for Pit-Coal.

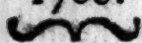
The *English* on board his Ship murmur at him for it.

THERE was a Necessity of putting an end to these Disputes, and of sending out a Ship for Intelligence. For this purpose I detach'd a Frigate out of my Company, which was a very good Sailer, and order'd the Officer, when he got as near the Fleet as he could, to fire two Cannon, and to bring the Ship upon the Stay, if it was a Fleet of Merchant-Ships; and to fire five Guns, and make all the Sail he could back again, supposing it was the Enemy's Fleet.

He sends out a Spy for Intelligence.



1708.



MEAN while, in order to lose no Time, I still made all the Sail possible, 'till I had doubled the *Cape*, and got Sea-room. The Enemy gave me Chase, and had I had none but Pinks (according to the fine Scheme that was projected) every Ship had been lost without Remedy. I could not have sav'd the Fleet, if they had not been Privateers that were good Sailers, and fresh careen'd, so that we soon gain'd a great deal of Way.

One Ship  
only makes  
the Attack.

ONE single Ship of the Enemy's Fleet came up with us. He bore down upon us with full Sail, so that I was oblig'd to go before the Wind. This Ship, which seem'd to aim particularly at mine, probably that he might have the Honour of Fighting the King of *England*, began to cannonade the *Sieur Tourouvre*, who was behind me. 'Tis not to be imagined how much the Sight of this Ship (tho' single, and detach'd from the rest of the Enemy's Fleet, which was above four Leagues off) alarmed all the *English* I had on board. They already look'd upon all as lost, which pannic Terror of theirs made me rejoyce heartily.

The Spy's  
Return.

WHILE they were under this Uncertainty, the Frigate that I had sent out as a Spy, return'd, and made a Report that

that  
in w  
ten  
up t  
bante  
Ship  
that  
load

Th  
ed, a  
to hi  
which  
and  
shore.  
he kn

Te  
fal,  
'Ene  
whic  
all th  
be f  
taken  
Boar  
Dang  
fore  
suit.

The  
Answ  
thing  
Terror  
proach  
made r

that she had computed 38 Men of War, 1708.  
 in which Number there were above  
 ten with three Decks. Then taking  
 up the Officer very quick, Surely you  
 banter (said I, in a jeering way) the  
 Ships you saw were only Merchants  
 that come every Year to *Edinburgh* to  
 load Pit-Coals.

THE *English* more and more affright-  
 ed, apply'd to the King, and propos'd  
 to him to go on board the Frigate  
 which was sent out for Intelligence,  
 and to land at a Castle on the Sea-  
 shore, belonging to a Nobleman who  
 he knew was well-affected.

The *English*  
 terrify'd at  
 his Report,

THE Prince told me of the Propo-  
 sal, 'Sire (said I) you are safe, and the  
 Enemy can't hurt us. This Ship  
 which pursues us, and which alarms  
 all those Gentlemen, is not much to  
 be fear'd, and should very soon be  
 taken, if your Majesty was not on  
 Board. But I will provide against all  
 Danger, and it will not be long be-  
 fore we shall be beyond all Pur-  
 suit.'

Their Pro-  
 posal for the  
 Chevalier's  
 going a-  
 shore, and  
 the Count's  
 Answer to  
 it.

The King was so pleas'd with this  
 Answer, that he seem'd to desire no-  
 thing more; but the *English*, whose  
 Terror increas'd as fast as the Enemy ap-  
 proach'd, repeated their Instances, and  
 made the Prince believe I expos'd him

1708. to very great Peril, insomuch that when the King desired my Long-boat to go aboard another Ship, as it had been propos'd to him, (tho' I represented that his Person was in no Danger) he told me, that he would be obey'd without so much Dispute.

'Sire (said I) your Majesty shall have 'what you desire.' I order'd my Upper Steersman to put the Long-boat to Sea, but at the same time I made Sign to him with my Hand, not to do it: And addressing my self to the King; 'Sire (said I) I intreat your Majesty to be so good as to go into that Room, I have something to tell you of Importance.

'What is it (said the King, when we were enter'd.) Sire, (said I) your Majesty cannot doubt, that as I have very strict Orders for the Preservation of your Person, I should be the first Man to desire you to go aboard another Ship, if I was not sure that you ran no Risque in this. But I beg you to repose a Confidence in me, and to reject the ill Counsel that is given you from all Hands. I will be watchful of every thing, and if there's a Necessity for your Majesty's going into another Ship, I will undertake

'com



' come and propose it to you, when 'tis  
' time.' 1708.

THE King, who was not easily prevail'd on by the Importunity of the *English*, had not a Word more to say; but when the Cannon Bullets began to whiz about our Ears, the Poltroons Hearts ak'd to such a degree, that they teiz'd the Prince again by a Representation of the evident Danger to which my Rashness expos'd him, and how much it was to be fear'd that he wou'd not be able to get off, if it was delay'd a Moment longer: They again propos'd to him to go ashore at the Nobleman's Seat, mention'd to him at first; and they made him believe he had no other Course to take, in such positive Terms, that the King told me he would have the Long-boat in a Moment, without Contradiction.

I am a Man so fiery and impatient, that I could not help saying to him; ' Sire, I have already had the Honour to represent to your Majesty, that you are safe here; I have Orders from the King my Master to take as much care of your Person, as if it was his own. I will never give my Consent that your Majesty should go ashore to be expos'd at a Country-Sear without any Assistance, and where  
' you

1708. ' you may perhaps be deliver'd up the  
 next Day to the Enemy.

' I am oblig'd to take care of you,  
 ' and my Head is answerable for your  
 ' Person. I beg you to depend intire-  
 ' ly on me, and to hearken to no bo-  
 ' dy else. All that dare give you any  
 ' other Advice, are either Traitors or  
 ' Poltrons.' An *English* Nobleman who  
 stood by the King, said immediately,  
 ' Sire, the Count understands the Sea  
 ' better than we do, his Head is an-  
 ' swerable for your Person; we must  
 ' trust to him.'

MY Resolution not to suffer the  
 King to land, put all those Advice-  
 mongers to silence. When I saw the  
 Ship approaching still with the Ad-  
 vantage of Sails, I address'd my self;  
 ' Sire (said I) 'tis now evident that this  
 ' Ship has a Design upon none but us,  
 ' because she leaves several other Ships  
 ' behind her, which she might attack.  
 ' I will examine if your Majesty can  
 ' run any Risque; hitherto this Ship  
 ' comes on with the Advantage of Sails,  
 ' but since she is now set towards the  
 ' East, as well as ours, a short half  
 ' Hour will determine it. If we fail  
 ' better than she, there's nothing to  
 ' fear, and we have nothing to do but  
 ' to continue our Course. But if she

' is

1708.

'is the best Sailer, your Majesty shall  
'go into this Frigate which sails close  
'by us, and then when we have no-  
'thing more to fear for your Person,  
'I will go and board this troublesome  
'Ship, and doubt not to give you a  
'good Account of her, after an Hour's  
'Fight at most. Mean time I will go  
'and order out the Long-boat; be so  
'good, by way of Precaution, as to  
'nominate those who are to go on  
'board with you, to the end that if  
'need be, they may be ready.

The King nominated his Confessor,  
my Lord Perth, the Marshal de Ma-  
tignon, and my Lord Middleton. I de-  
sired all those Gentlemen to sit down  
but for one Moment, assuring them,  
that if his Majesty was oblig'd to quit  
our Ship, the *Englishman* would soon  
be quiet.

I had not observ'd the latter many  
Minutes, when I perceiv'd that she  
was a bad Sailer, and that I had alrea-  
dy gain'd upon her considerably. I  
went with the News to the King, to  
whom I said, 'Sire, this Ship will quit  
'us in a Moment, and your Majesty  
'will not be oblig'd to land.'

THE Event soon justify'd what I had  
said. The Enemy despairing of com-  
ing up with us, unmoor'd, and went

to



1708. to intercept the Chevalier *de Nangis*, who was coming behind, and attack'd him. When I saw my self disengag'd, I sent four Frigates, the best Sailors, to carry my Orders to all the Ships of the Fleet to crowd all the Sail possible in the Dusk of the Evening, and to shape their Course E. N. E. In the mean time I heard the Report of two Guns, but against whom they were fired, I cannot tell; and next Day I found my self, and twenty Ships of my Fleet that follow'd me, quite out of the Enemy's Ken.

The Count's Orders to the Fleet to sheer off.

A Council of War held, pursuant to which the Fleet returns to *Dunkirk*.

IN the Morning the King assembled a grand Council of War, in which, after all things duly considered, it was resolved, that since we had been discover'd by the Enemy, who would not fail to pursue our Fleet whithersoever it went; and since we had no Port in *Scotland* where we could be admitted, we should return to *France*, because we had no other Resource left. We sail'd therefore for *Dunkirk*, where in spite of contrary Winds, we arriv'd, after having been out just three Weeks.

The Chevalier *de Nangis* taken.

WHEN I landed, I heard that the Chevalier *de Nangis* was taken, which perfectly surpriz'd me, for his was the best Ship in the Fleet. As he was but young,

1708.

young, he wanted Experience, consequently did not take all the Precautions necessary for his own Safety, but prepar'd to fight, when he should have made all the Sail he cou'd away. I am perswaded that this little Disappointment was of no Disservice to him afterwards; and that as he was brave, and descended of a good Family, he wou'd be wise enough to improve a Misfortune, which cannot be term'd so in all Respects, when it serves to render those to whom it happens, the more circumspect.

DURING the Voyage, my Lords *Perth* and *Middleton* told me, that I had Relations in *Scotland*, call'd, the Lords *Forbes*, who were very rich and well affected to King *James*. They said likewise, that they had heard them say several times, that they had Kindred in *France*.

The Count's  
Relations  
in *Scotland*.

I heard also at my Arrival, that one of my Ships being got, during the Night, in the midst of the Enemy's Fleet, the Captain had work'd her Way out so well, that he sheer'd behind it, and arriv'd three Days after at *Dunkirk*; that the said Captain had sent an Account to Court of the Manner how he got off; and that the Enemy, with forty Ships, were pursuing the

1708. the rest of our Fleet. I was inform'd afterwards, that when the Minister acquainted the King with this News, he said to him; 'Sire, the Count de Forbin will escape with his whole Fleet; for he has no Ships with him but what are Privateers, and good Sailers.'

The Count's  
Narrative of  
his ill Usage  
by the  
French Mi-  
nistry.

AFTER having unrigg'd all my Ships, upon the Miscarriage of the Project for a Descent, I was thinking of a new Armament, in order to cruize as I had done in the preceding Campaigns, when I was prevented by an Incident which I foresaw indeed, tho' it was not altogether in my Power to divert it, and to which at length I fell a Sacrifice.

The Miscar-  
riage of the  
Expedition,  
to what ac-  
scrib'd.

I have already said that the Ministers of War and the Navy, were very much at Variance. They had great Disputes before the King about the Expedition to Scotland, the Miscarriage of which, the one ascrib'd to the Officers of the Navy, and the other to the Delay of the Soldiers that were to be put on Board.

BUT if I may be allowed to declare my Opinion, I think they were both in the Wrong to accuse one another in that manner, and that neither of them deserv'd Blame; because tho' the Sea-  
men,



men, who delay'd the Embarkation for two Days, had arriv'd at the very Time appointed, yet the Illness of the King of *England*, and the contrary Winds, would have hindred us from sailing sooner than we did. But I say it again, those Gentlemen were at Variance, and they were resolv'd to do each other a Mischief.

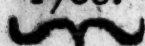
1708.  
A Contest between the Ministers of War and the Navy.

Mr. *de Chamillard* magnify'd his Punctuality in sending the Troops, and he said that their halting at *St. Omer* was owing to the Count *de Forbin*, and the two Intendants of the Navy, the one of the Port, and the other of the Embarkation, who went to the Marshal *de Matignon* to desire him to cause the Troops to stop at *St. Omers*, and represented to him, that if the Soldiers came to *Dunkirk* before every thing was ready to embark them, the Enemy, who were already uneasy at the fitting out thirty Ships, wou'd not fail to take Measures to frustrate the Court's Design.

THE Minister of the Navy on the other hand, deny'd all these Facts, and pretended that the Embarkation had not been so long delay'd, if the Troops had not stay'd unluckily at *St. Omers*.

In

1708.



IN order to clear up this, which was the only difficult Point, the Minister of War wrote to the Marshal *de Matignon* to demand of the Count *de Forbin*, and of the Intendants, a Certificate, to make it appear that they came to desire him to order the Troops to halt at *St. Omers*, 'till the Sailors they expected were arriv'd.

Mr. *de Ponchartrain* being inform'd of this Proceeding of Mr. *de Chamillard*, wrote to me, and to the Intendants, to be cautious of giving the Certificate which was to be demanded of us. I had but just receiv'd the Minister's Letter, when Mr. *de Matignon* sent for me, and after declaring Mr. *de Chamillard's* Intentions, would fain have oblig'd me that Moment to grant him what he desired.

' Sir (saïd I) 'tis true, that I was with you to desire you to retard the Arrival of the Troops; but I was not alone, the two Intendants came with me. I'll go find them out, and we will lay our Heads together, to consult how to give you Satisfaction.' I went accordingly to find them out, and acquainted them with the Marshal's Pretensions. We were sensible that he had reason to demand a Certificate. But the Minister having forbid us to grant

grant it, we were at first very much perplex'd what to do. 1708.

BUT the Intendants quickly determin'd what Course to take, and having weigh'd the Consequences of what was required of 'em, they declar'd to me in plain Terms, that happen what would, for their Parts they wou'd obey the Minister of the Navy, and wou'd grant nothing in prejudice of his Orders; that he was their Master, and that they were not willing to lose their Fortune by disobeying him; That for my Part, I might take what Measures I thought fit, and that being by Employment in a Situation very different from theirs, I should easily find Ways and Means to get out of the Scrape.

The Marshal, impatient that he had no Answer from me, sent for me again, and tho' he is a good-natured Man, yet, as he saw me coming towards him, he call'd out, in a thorough Passion, *Where is the Certificate that I demanded of you?* ' Sir (said I) the two ' Intendants absolutely refuse to sign ' it. I did all I cou'd to perswade them ' to give you that Satisfaction; but ' they wou'd by no means hearken to ' Reason.

' I shall make them obey me (reply'd he) tho' in the main I am not ' so



1708. 'so very solicitous for a Certificate  
 'from them; 'tis yours that I want  
 'chiefly.' 'Sir, said I, What Good  
 'will mine do you? And what Re-  
 'gard will the Court pay to it, when  
 'it appears alone? It will not be much  
 'minded there.

'You are mistaken, reply'd the  
 'Marshal, for the Court will have  
 'much more Regard to the Testimony  
 'of a Man of your Station, than to  
 'any thing that the Intendants can at-  
 'test. 'Tis very well known, that  
 'People of that Class, who have nei-  
 'ther Courage nor Honour, and only  
 'serve the King with a View to make  
 'their Fortunes, don't deserve much  
 'Heed to what they say. I say it  
 'once again, 'tis your Testimony that  
 'I want, that's enough for me, and  
 'I care not a Rush for the others.

I was too sensible what would be  
 the Consequence of the Measures which  
 he endeavoured to engage me in, and  
 was for drawing back as much as possi-  
 ble. Sir, said I, let me beg you not  
 'to be so hasty with me, but to con-  
 'sider what I shall now do my self  
 'the Honour to lay before you.

'You are arriv'd to the Height of  
 'Preferment; and the Dignity with  
 'which the King has lately honour'd  
 'you,

1708.

‘ you, leaves you nothing either to wish  
 ‘ or fear. But ’tis not so with me. I  
 ‘ am but a Gentleman, that have been  
 ‘ a long time in the Service, and have  
 ‘ always taken Pains for my Advance-  
 ‘ ment. No doubt you fully under-  
 ‘ stand my Meaning. I have very co-  
 ‘ gent Reasons to refuse the Certifi-  
 ‘ cate which you demand, and I beg  
 ‘ for God’s sake that you will not insist  
 ‘ on it.

‘ I’ll hear nothing to the contrary,  
 ‘ (reply’d the Marshal) the Certificate  
 ‘ I will have, and if you don’t give  
 ‘ it me this Instant, I’ll arrest you.’

THIS Menace threw me immediate-  
 ly into a great many uneasy Reflecti-  
 ons: For, I not only thought that  
 the Marshal talk’d in too high a Strain,  
 and that he should not have been so  
 very rough with an old Officer, for  
 whom he did not seem to have all due  
 Respect; but I consider’d with my  
 self, what a Noise my Confinement  
 would make in the World, supposing  
 that the Marshal shou’d really push me  
 to that Extremity.

I saw also, that if I was conducted  
 to Court, it would have been a great  
 Mortification to the Minister, because  
 the King, who wou’d without fail  
 have penetrated into the Motives of  
 my

1708. my Refusal, and to whom I must have been forc'd to have confess'd them, if he had ask'd me, wou'd certainly have taken the Minister's Plea very ill, and have reproach'd him for it. In order to save him this Vexation, I begg'd the Marshal to give me time to consider of it, and said that in a couple of Hours I wou'd bring him my Answer.

I went immediately to confer again with the two Intendants, when we seriously re-considered all the Inconveniencies that might attend either the Grant, or the Refusal of what was desired of me; and after having weigh'd both in the Balance, we thought the best way would be to give the Marshal Satisfaction.

WE agreed likewise, that I shou'd write to the Minister, and give him a particular Account of the Violence with which I had been treated, of the late Menaces of the Marshal *de Matignon*, and of the Reasons why I had thought fit, notwithstanding the Minister's Orders, to grant this plaguy Certificate. I set my Hand to it accordingly.

The Count  
disobliges  
the Minister  
of France,

THE Minister, incens'd at what I had done, answer'd me roughly, that I was inexcusable, for having proceeded

so



so far; that I ought to have conform'd to his Intentions; but that since I had chose to regulate my Conduct by my own private Views, in spite of the Orders which I had receiv'd, I might depend on't he wou'd remember it; and that my Affairs shou'd go never the better for it hereafter.

WHEN I read his Letter, I fully discover'd my Mistake: For, after all, the Minister had Reason on his Side, and it was my Place to have obey'd, without troubling my Head with the Consequences. I must also observe by the way, that I was in the Wrong to go with the two Intendants to desire the Count *de Gasse* to detain the Troops at *St. Omers* 'till the Arrival of the Seamen. My Intentions indeed were good, because I had no other Views than to secure the Success of the Court's Project; but I ought to have consider'd the fatal Consequences with which such a Step might have been attended.

LET those therefore who for the future wou'd advance themselves in the Service, adhere inviolably to these two Maxims. In the first Place, never to meddle with any thing foreign to their Employment: And in the second Place, to pay a blind Obedience

1708.  
The Count owns his Mistake.

His Advice to those who wou'd advance themselves in the King's Service.

1708.

dience to whatsoever Orders they receive, how contradictory soever they appear to their own private Judgment, because it shou'd always be supposed that Ministers have superior Views, which 'tis never allow'd to enquire into.

EVERY one who reads these Memoirs, must think my own Experience in this Article a sufficient Proof of what I here advance; for because I thought fit to contravene the Orders I had receiv'd, tho' it was with the best Intentions that a Man cou'd have; yet the Minister never forgave me, always oppos'd my Interest, and affected to mortify me, whenever he found an Opportunity.

His Acknowledgment of God's Providence in his Restoration from the Service.

FOR this Reason, immediately after the Peace was concluded, I left the Service. I own, that in this Respect I have much more reason to bless, than to repine at Providence, because the Rest to which I was restor'd in my Retirement, contributed to the Cure of all my Wounds, and to the Recovery of that Health which my long Service and incredible Fatigues had impair'd: Whereas if I had chose to continue in the Service, I must have been content to have swallow'd many a bitter Pill, and all for not having obey'd the Letter.

ter  
I o  
ret  
the  
acc  
fage  
a t  
a th  
quer  
ceed  
this  
thou  
der'd  
was  
Mar  
and  
men  
Offic  
Boar  
all ki  
which  
Ship,  
Guest  
fides  
Guest  
whole  
ble to  
prepar  
ME  
nible  
furnish  
Vol

ter. After this short Reflection, which 1708.  
I cou'd not help thinking necessary, I  
return to my Narrative.

IN order to make me Amends for the Expence I had been oblig'd to on account of the King of *England's* Passage, the King gave me a Present of a thousand Livres, and a Pension of a thousand Crowns out of the *Exchequer*; but I can safely say, without exceeding the Bounds of Truth, that this Commission cost me above four thousand Livres. Nor will it be wonder'd at, when 'tis consider'd, that I was oblig'd to provide for a King, a Marshal of *France*, several Noblemen, and a numerous Retinue of Gentlemen of Distinction, besides General-Officers, that I was forc'd to have on Board above Fourscore Domesticks of all kinds, and that the King's Table, which was always kept on Board my Ship, was spread every Day for twelve Guests, and magnificently serv'd; besides three other Tables for fifteen Guests each, and my own for ten; the whole serv'd very elegantly, and suitable to the Persons for whom they were prepar'd.

The Count's  
Gratuity and  
Pension for  
his Ex-  
pences, on  
account of  
the Cheva-  
lier de St.  
George.

The Tables  
he kept for  
him and his  
Attendance.

MEAN time, as it might seem incredible how so many Tables cou'd be furnish'd in a Ship where there were



1708. but two Kitchens, one for the Captain, and another for the Crew, the Order and Method of it was as follows.

The Manner  
of serving  
them.

THE Beef, Mutton, and Fowls were boil'd in one great Kettle, from whence the Broth was taken for the Soups. I had put a great many Hearths and little Stoves aboard for dressing the Ragoes. The Crew din'd at ten a-clock, and at the same time a Table was serv'd which was spread for fifteen Guests. At eleven a-clock two others were serv'd, which were spread for the same Number of Guests, and the Meat was roasted in the two Kitchens. The King's Table was serv'd at Noon, and next to his, mine, which was not the meanest of all.

I had embark'd four Master-Cooks, besides a good Number of Under-Cooks and Officers, to take care of the Deserts. These were all continually employ'd, and were assisted by the Sailors too, for a great Part of the Time.

DURING the whole Voyage, which was only three Weeks, the King's Table was always serv'd with Partridges and Pheasants, of which I had taken care to put a great Number on Board, as well as of every thing what-

soever

soever, that might contribute to good Cheer and Delicacy. 1708.

WHEN the Enemy chac'd us, I was verymuch press'd to throw the Beef, Mutton, Veal, and every thing that was most cumbersome, into the Sea; I was by no means of that Opinion, but told those who advis'd me to it, that it would be time enough hereafter to throw away our Provisions, but not before things came to the last Extremity. I was in the right not to hearken to their fine Advice, for those Provisions serv'd to feast us, and had it not been for them, we must have liv'd upon Bacon.

WHEN the Fleet was unladen, I propos'd to put to Sea again with my Squadron. The five Men of War that had serv'd me for the Descent on *Scotland*, were ready to sail, but they were not sufficient; and the Intendant having neglected the Careening of the others that I wanted, it required a great deal of Time to put them in a Condition for Service.

DURING this, the Enemy, with forty Men of War, block'd up *Dunkirk*. My Ships were too large to pass over the Shelves that form the Road, and yet if this was not done, there was a Necessity, either of staying in the Har-

1708.  Harbour, or sailing boldly thro' the Channel, in sight of the Enemy, who would have born me down with their Number.

As there was no Prospect of running this Risque, I was forc'd to spend my Provisions in the Road, which made me very uneasy. I wrote several times to the Minister for an Order to venture out, but he never would consent to it, declaring, that he wou'd leave it to my Prudence to act as I thought convenient. For my own part, I thought the Danger too apparent, and wou'd never charge my self with an Event of such Importance.

The Block-  
ade quit-  
ted.

THE Season being already far advanc'd, and there being no Prospect of an Opportunity to do any thing of consequence, I unrigg'd, and the Enemy retir'd. M. de Ponchartrain being inform'd that I had laid up the Ships, desir'd that the five great Ships which I had might be fitted out again, and that they might go a Cruizing during the Winter. He wrote to me, that he gave the Command of the Squadron to me, with a Power to transfer it, if I did not like it, to some other Captain of the Squadron that I thought fittest for it.



1708.



I desir'd the Minister to consider that Cruises of this sort in the Winter must always be very dangerous and unprofitable, that the Nights being very long, the Weather severe, and the Seas subject to many Tempests, there was no possibility of doing any thing, that 'twas impossible the five Ships shou'd continue long together, that in order to meet again, some Place must be appointed for a Rendezvous, that the best part of the time wou'd be spent in meeting again; and that in a word, Cruises in this Season were only proper for a Ship or two at most, which if they can keep at Sea may by chance take some Prizes.

THE Minister did not approve of my Reasons, and still insisted on sitting out the Squadron; but I desir'd to be excus'd from the Command of it, which I gave to *M. de Tourouvre*. Every thing that I foresaw happen'd: the Squadron sail'd, it suffer'd very much by bad Weather, and after having been several times separated, return'd to *Dunkirk*, without the least Prize, after having spent a great deal of the King's Money.

As for my own part, having nothing to do all that time, I was musing one Day on the State of Affairs in

1708. *Enrope*, and on Ways and Means of doing Service to my King, when I hit upon a Project that wou'd have sadly embarrass'd the *English*, if particular Reasons had not hinder'd the Execution of it. The Allies were then besieging *Lisle*, and had drawn all their Forces together, which was the Consideration that gave Birth to my Project, whereof I gave the Minister a hint as follows.

The  
Count's  
Project to  
embarrass  
the *English*.

AFTER having told him by way of Preface, that idle People were apt to build Castles in the Air, and that what I sent to him was nothing but the Brat of an Imagination that delighted in roving, 'All the Enemies Forces, said  
' I, are employ'd in the Siege of  
' *Lisle*, so that there's not a Soldier  
' remaining in *England*, but some sorry  
' Militia that are not to be depended on.

' The King's Army is at hand to  
' assist the Navy, and in a condition  
' to be embark'd very soon. If the  
' Court will but send over 30000  
' Men to *England*, I'll engage for  
' their Passage in 6, 12 and 18  
' Hours.

' You are not ignorant that the  
' Kingdom is full of Parties, and that  
' many of the People wou'd declare  
' for the *French*, in which case our

30000

30000 Men marching directly to <sup>1708.</sup>  
*London* wou'd infallibly take it. 'Tis  
 natural to imagine, that the Con-  
 quest of that Capital wou'd cause a  
 strange Revolution in the Kingdom,  
 that if the Enemy shou'd make ever so  
 little Delay in sending over Succours,  
 our Troops wou'd be able to make  
 a great Progress in the Country;  
 that be the Enemy never so diligent  
 in forwarding those Succours, yet  
 they have so long a way to come  
 both by Sea and Land, that it  
 wou'd be easy for us to do them a  
 great deal of Mischief before their  
 Arrival, and that at least, tho' we  
 were to gain nothing by it, the  
*English* wou'd be oblig'd to raise the  
 Siege of *Lisle*, in order to succour  
 their own Country.

THE Minister sent me for Answer,  
 that the Court highly approv'd of my  
 Scheme; that indeed the present Si-  
 tuation of Affairs did not permit the  
 Execution of it, but that I had done  
 him a Pleasure in imparting my Views  
 to him, the Communication of which  
 he desir'd me to continue.

MUCH about that time I receiv'd  
 an Order from the Duke of *Burgundy*  
 to send the Marines to the attack of  
*Effingen*, an Important Post upon the  
 Canal,

He goes  
 with the  
 Marines to  
*Newport*.



1708.

Canal, that goes from *Bruges* to *Newport*, and which serves to cover *Ostend*. I had but one Battalion of Marines, and desir'd the *Chevalier de Langeron*, that he wou'd please to join his with mine, which he consented to. I caus'd him to be admitted a Colonel, and we march'd to *Newport*, where in quality of General Officers I went out with the Troops to make Trenches to drown the Country, and I posted the Guards in sight of the Enemy.

His Dispute  
there with  
a Land  
Officer.

I had perform'd all the Functions of my Employment for several Days without any scruple, when a Land-Officer who was no more than a Brigadier, thought fit to dispute the Command with me. The Duke de *Vendome* who was on the other side of *Effingben* being inform'd of this Contest, which might perhaps have been attended with bad Consequences, did me the honour to write to me.

The Duke  
de *Ven-*  
*dome's* Let-  
ter to him  
upon it.

He told me, that indeed I was a General Officer of the Navy; but that having no Commission to command by Land, I shou'd be expos'd every Day to Quarrels of this nature; that he was charm'd with the Zeal I testify'd for the King's Service; that he wou'd inform his Majesty of it

it at  
the  
the S  
Com  
valie

I  
out a  
Head  
tant  
exce  
ders  
first  
contr  
quest  
we c  
kirk,  
Cour

I  
then  
a col  
what  
some  
left i  
ment  
been  
of E  
Squa  
fum'd  
whic  
Camp  
It  
Exha  
it

it at a proper Time and Place, but to the end that nothing might retard the Siege, he desir'd me to resign the Command of the Forces to the Chevalier *de Langeron*.

I obey'd so venerable an Order without any scruple. The Chevalier at the Head of the Marines did very Important Service, and signaliz'd himself exceedingly. The Seamen did Wonders under him, for they were the first that mounted the Breach, and contributed not a little to the Conquest of the Place; when it was taken we carry'd the Troops back to *Dunkirk*, from whence I set out for Court.

The Count's Return to *Dunkirk*.

I went to wait on the King, and then upon the Minister who gave me but a cold Reception, tho' no worse than what I expected. He sent for me some Days after. There was no Fund left in the Navy Chest for my Armament, and the Expence which I had been at for the Passage of the King of *England*, and for sitting out the Squadron in the Winter had consum'd all the Profit of the Prizes which I had made in the preceding Campaign.

He goes to Court. His cold Reception by the Minister.

It was to speak to me about this Exhausting of the Finances, that the Mini-

1708.

Minister wanted to see me. He desir'd me to find out private Persons that wou'd raise a Fund to be employ'd in fitting out the *Dunkirk* Squadron. I promis'd to do all in my Power to serve him, and cou'd easily have done it, but did not care to meddle with it. It wou'd have given me too much Pain to draw in a great many honest Men who had an entire Confidence in me, into great Expences, from which it was to be fear'd they wou'd reap no Profit; for 'tis certain that the Minister wou'd have employ'd the Squadron for the King's Service only, and not at all to the Advantage of the Lenders of the Money.

His Conversation  
with the  
Minister.

HE ask'd me some Days after, if I had found a Fund for the Armament he spoke of, to which I answer'd that I had met with no body that was both able and willing. I added at the same time, that it was his Business who had an infinite Credit, to find Undertakers for the Armament, that he cou'd do it with much more ease than another, that he need but apply himself to the Men of Business, and the Farmers, who had all the Money in the Kingdom, and had got too much by the King, to make a scruple of advancing what wou'd not hurt them to spare.

O U R



1708.

OUR Conversation held no longer then, but next Day when the Court was at *Marli* he sent for me. I found the Bailiff *de Langeron* there, and we din'd all three together. After Dinner he talk'd a great deal to us about the Armament at *Dunkirk*, and told us over and over that we must look out for Undertakers to fit out the *Dunkirk* Squadron.

As I insisted on the Impossibility of finding out such Men, not only by reason of the Scarcity of Money, but also because of the little Confidence repos'd in us; ' I know very well, *said he*, that you are always ' starting difficulties, and this is not ' the first time that you have refus'd ' to enter into my Views. I acquaint- ' ed you what they were formerly in ' an Affair of very great Consequence, ' but tho' I spoke to you very plainly, ' you wou'd never give Ear to me, ' but acted as if I had not said a Word ' to you.

I plainly saw what was the Tendency of all this Reproach, tho' I pretended not to perceive it, and excus'd my self by saying, that I always conform'd to my Instructions. The Minister reply'd to me, ' Your ' Instructions were always drawn up

' as.

1708.



‘ as was convenient; but I have  
 ‘ sufficiently given you to understand  
 ‘ what I wanted of you, in private  
 ‘ Conversation.

‘ ‘Tis very true, Sir, *I reply’d*;  
 ‘ and I perfectly understand you, since  
 ‘ it must be so, but I was far from  
 ‘ taking such Commissions upon me.  
 ‘ I knew before to-day, that when  
 ‘ a Subject zealous for his Sovereign’s  
 ‘ Service, is requir’d to execute any  
 ‘ thing of Importance, he ought to  
 ‘ have an Order in Writing put  
 ‘ into his Hand, to justify his Con-  
 ‘ duct when he has paid a due Obe-  
 ‘ dience.

‘ I learnt from the late Affair of  
 ‘ mine with the King of *Denmark*,  
 ‘ what wou’d be the Success of that  
 ‘ you are now speaking of. As to  
 ‘ the *Danish* Affair, you told me with  
 ‘ your own Mouth, that if I found  
 ‘ an Opportunity in the Port of *Den-*  
 ‘ *mark* to do any thing considerable  
 ‘ against the King’s Enemies I ought  
 ‘ not to slip it. In consequence of  
 ‘ this Declaration, which was Tan-  
 ‘ tamount to an Order, I burnt 25  
 ‘ *Dutch* Ships at my Approach to  
 ‘ the Coast, and in the Bay of the Isle  
 ‘ of *Wardbuys*, upon which the King  
 ‘ of *Denmark* complained against me,  
 ‘ and

1708.



‘ and his Embassador requir’d that I  
‘ might be punish’d as an Infringer  
‘ of the Peace, and demanded nothing  
‘ less than my Head. When I repre-  
‘ sented to you, that I had done  
‘ nothing but according to your In-  
‘ tentions, and that you were to ju-  
‘ stify me, you referr’d me coldly to  
‘ answer to M. de Torcy, as if I were  
‘ a Criminal; so that I was left to  
‘ my self to find out some Shadow  
‘ of Reason as a Colour for my Con-  
‘ duct.

‘ WHAT d’ye complain of, *said the*  
‘ *Minister interrupting me*; notwith-  
‘ standing the Embassador’s Instances,  
‘ nothing has happen’d to you; I  
‘ own it, *said I*; but you must know  
‘ that I had not come off so, if it  
‘ had not been for the secret Broils  
‘ and the Misunderstanding between  
‘ the two Crowns, so that the Court  
‘ is not very much in haste to give  
‘ that Prince satisfaction.

‘ BUT this would not have been  
‘ the case if I had perform’d what I  
‘ faithfully understood was your mean-  
‘ ing in the Affair you are mentioning.  
‘ I shou’d have had Complaints against  
‘ me infallibly; moreover I shou’d  
‘ have been prosecuted, and having  
‘ nothing to alledge in my Defence but  
‘ Words



1708.

Words which are forgot upon occasion, it wou'd have cost me my Head, so that had I been ever so Innocent I shou'd have been the Victim to have suffer'd the Blame of all, and to have been sacrific'd to the Complaints of those to whom my Conduct had been disagreeable.

At these Words the Minister fell a laughing, and banter'd a pretty while upon my Foresight, which he said he thought was unseasonable.

Goes to his  
Command  
at *Dunkirk*.

ABOUT the beginning of the Year 1709, I was sent to *Dunkirk* to Command there; and upon the report that the Enemy were to come and Bombard the Town, and burn the Piers, I had Orders to prepare Sloops, Long-boats, &c. to frustrate their Project; but it was a false Report, for no body came.

Returns  
again to  
Court.

I return'd again to Court, where I stay'd some time. I was very loth to go back any more to *Dunkirk*; my Health was very much impair'd, and I suffer'd a great deal, not only from my old Wounds, but from many other Infirmities, which I had contracted in my long Voyages, and the many Dangers I had undergone.

Desires to  
go no more  
to *Dunkirk*.

I therefore made my Addresses to the Minister, and told him, that as there

ther  
Por  
me  
Enfi  
to h  
fore  
Toul  
on h  
fail  
pers  
neces  
Air,  
Hanc  
and  
the  
dema  
M  
and p  
Mini  
a blu  
cou'd  
neces  
vour  
for 3  
go an  
T  
return  
as Co  
of A  
firmi  
severa  
that

1709.

there were no Ships equipping in that Port now, it signify'd nothing for me to be there any longer; that an Ensign was sufficient for the Service to be perform'd there, and that therefore I desir'd him to Station me at *Toulon*. And the better to prevail upon him to grant my Wish, I did not fail to make the worst of my Distempers, which I said put me under a necessity of returning to my Native Air, where I shou'd have Remedies at Hand for restoring me to my Health, and for enabling me to go even to the World's end if the King's Service demanded it.

My insisting, and even begging, and praying, was to no purpose; the Minister was inflexible, he gave me a blunt denial; All the Answer I cou'd get, was, that my Presence was necessary at *Dunkirk*, and the only Favour I cou'd obtain was a Furlough for 3 Months, during which I might go and settle my Affairs in *Provence*.

THE next Year I was oblig'd to return again to *Dunkirk*, to act there as Commandant. But as the decline of Age never comes on without Infirmities, mine increas'd apace, and several of my Wounds bled afresh, so that I was oblig'd to go to *Provence*, where

He goes to  
*Provence* for  
his Health.

1710.

Is under the  
Minister's  
Displeasure  
for not re-  
turning to  
*Dunkirk*.

where I put my self into the Hands of Surgeons. From thence I wrote to the Minister that I was not in a Condition to return to my Post, which he took very ill, wou'd fain have oblig'd me to go thither, and threaten'd to strike me out of the Navy Books if I did not speedily obey.

I answer'd him that he might do what he pleas'd, but that in my present Condition it was absolutely impossible for me to Travel. I sent him Certificates of Physicians, and Surgeons, sign'd by M. *Arnoux* Intendant of the Ga'lles, as to the Nature and Condition of my Wounds, but he made no account of it, and persisted in his Resolution to be obey'd.

The Cardinal de *Jan-son* gets him station'd at *Toulon*.

In fine, I wrote to the Cardinal de *Jan-son*, and acquainted him of my Condition, whereupon his Eminency spake to the Minister, and prevail'd for my being station'd at *Toulon*. I went to that Town; but as soon as I came, my Infirmities increas'd considerably. I wrote again to the Minister, desiring him to permit me to go home, at least for a while, for the Recovery of my Health, that I might be enabled to spend the Remainder of my Days in his Majesty's Service; but no regard was had to my Intreaty, and

The Minister's unkindness to him.

Fre  
from  
T  
we  
reso  
rath  
on  
conc  
read  
little  
fairs  
I  
train  
ever  
no  
mem  
his M  
from  
T  
for  
the  
but  
only  
Pen  
of 3  
for t  
I  
any  
my  
of A  
Cour  
bour  
liv'd  
V



I receiv'd a positive Order not to stir from *Toulon*. 1710.

THIS unkind Treatment of me went to my very Heart, and made me resolve to retire for good and all, the rather because I saw plainly, that upon the Peace which was as good as concluded with *England*, if not already made, there wou'd be very little to do hereafter in Maritim Affairs.

The Count resolves to retire, and writes to M. de Ponchartrain.

I wrote therefore to M. de Ponchartrain once more, that I found my self every Day worse, and that as I saw no other Cure but a total Retirement, I begg'd him to intercede with his Majesty for an absolute Discharge from the Service.

THIS Minister, who never car'd for me, especially since the Affair of the Certificate, did not dally with me, but sent me all that I desir'd, not only an absolute Discharge, but a Pension of 4000 Livres added to that of 3000 Livres which I had enjoy'd for two Years.

I shall not spin out these Memoirs any farther. When I had receiv'd my Discharge, I retir'd at 56 Years of Age, after 44 Years Service, to a Country-house of mine in the Neighbourhood of *Marseilles*, where I have liv'd ever since.

1710.

His Character of himself in his Retirement.

THERE I breathe a very good Air, and lead a comfortable quiet Life, entirely devoted to the Service of my Creator, and to the Cultivation of Friends, whose Correspondence I prefer to the most splendid Offers of Fortune. I spend part of my Revenue in the Relief of the Poor, and make it my Business to reconcile the differences of private Families, either by putting an end to old Quarrels, or to the Law-suits of such as are for referring them to my Arbitration.

THIS peaceful way of living has restor'd me to my former Vigour; all my Ailments are entirely vanish'd; and notwithstanding my advanc'd Age, I am as strong and robust as I was in my Prime: So that far from repining at the disgusts I ever receiv'd from Court, I frankly own they have done me much more good than hurt, because 'tis to them I owe a Happiness, which I knew nothing of before, and perhaps shou'd never have had a Taste of in all my Life.

F I N I S.





BOOKS lately Printed for J. Pemberton,  
at the Golden Buck against St. Dunstan's  
Church in Fleetstreet.

OCTAVO and DUODECIMO:

THE History of the late Revolution of *Persia*: taken from the Memoirs of Father *Krusinski*, Procurator of the Jesuits of *Ispahan*; who lived twenty Years in that Country, was employ'd by the Bishop of *Ispahan* in his Negotiations at the *Persian* Court, for the Emperor and the King of *France*, and was familiarly conversant with the greatest Men of all Parties. Done into *English* from the Original, just publish'd with the Royal License at *Paris*, by Father *Du-Cerceau*, who has prefix'd a Map of *Persia*, and a short History of the *Sophies*. With curious Remarks on the Accounts given by Sir *John Chardin*, *Tavernier*, and other Writers, who have treated particularly of that Government and Country. In two Volumes. Price 7 s. 6 d.

The Critical History of *England*, Ecclesiastical and Civil; wherein the Errors of the *Monkish* Writers, and others before the Reformation, are exposed and corrected: As are also the Deficiency and Partiality of later Historians. And particular Notice is taken of the History of the Grand Rebellion, and Mr. Arch-Deacon *Echard's* History of *Engladd*. To which are added, Remarks on some Objections to Bishop *Burnet's* History of his own Life and Times, and the Characters of Arch-Deacon *Echard's* Authors. The Third Edition, Corrected and Improved. To which is added, an Essay on CRITICISM, as it regards Design, Thought, and Expression in Prose and Verse. Vol. I. Price 5 s.

The Critical History of *England*, Ecclesiastical and Civil. Vol. II. Containing an Examen of Mr. *Echard's* History of the Reigns of *Henry VIII.* *Edward VI.* *Queen Mary.* *Queen Elizabeth.* *James I.* *Charles I.* *Charles II.* *James II.* Shewing from whence, and from whom all our unhappy



## BOOKS printed for J. Pemberton.

unhappy Divisions and Distractions have risen, from the Reformation to the Revolution. To which are added, farther Remarks on the History of the Grand Rebellion. Price 7s.

The Secret History of Europe, in Four Parts compleat. Consisting of the most private Affairs, transacted by all Parties for 50 Years past. Extracted from the most authentick Memoirs, as well Printed as Manuscript. With a large Appendix, containing Original Papers, Speeches, and the Proceedings upon the Earl of Danby's Impeachment. An Account of the Earl of Clarendon's Impeachment, with the Resolutions of Parliament against him after his Flight; Sir John Fenwick's Attainder, &c. The Fourth Edition. Price 12s.

Clarendon and Whitlocke compar'd. To which is occasionally added, A Comparison between the History of the Rebellion, and other Histories of the Civil Wars. Proving very plainly, that the Editors of the Lord Clarendon's History have hardly left one Fact, or one Character on the Parliament Side, fairly represented; that the Characters are all Satire, or Panegyrick, and the Facts adapted to the one, or the other, as suited best with their Design. Price 5s.

These four by the same Author.

The History of the Revolutions that happen'd in the Government of the Roman Republic. Written in French by the Abbot de Vertot, of the Royal Academy of Inscriptions, &c. In two Volumes. The Third Edition, English'd by Mr. Ozell, from the Original newly reprinted at Paris, with Emendations and Additions by the Author himself in almost every Page. To which is prefix'd, a Translation of a Memorial sent from London, by the late Earl Stanhope, to the Abbot de Vertot at Paris. Containing divers Questions relating to the Constitution of the Roman Senate. With the Abbot's Answer. Price 10s.

The Roman History of Cains Velleius Paterculus. In two Books. Translated from the Oxford Edition, and collated with all the former ones of Note. To which is prefix'd, a Character of the Author and his Writings, extracted from Monsieur Bayle, and others. The Second Edition. By Thomas Newcomb, M. A. Chaplain to his Grace the Duke of Richmond. Price 2s. 6d.



the  
far-  
ion.  
leat.  
all  
hen-  
arge  
the  
An  
the  
Sir  
125.  
cca-  
the  
ving  
Hi-  
the  
s are  
one;

the  
rench  
scrip-  
lish'd  
Paris,  
lf in  
on of  
be, to  
tions  
With

In  
col-  
pre-  
acted  
ition,  
the